

TRUSTING THE FATHER

**BIBLE STUDY BOOKLET
LESSONS 021 – 040**

Chris Badenhorst

INDEX

- Preface
- 021** A Redeemed & Reconciled (Not Fallen) World (MEV)
- 022** Righteousness is Not a Behaviour! (AMP)
- 023** Salvation / Saved (NABRE)
- 024** God Allowed It? (MSG)
- 025** The Lord's Prayer (NMB)
- 026** Baptisms (GWT)
- 027** Filled with The Holy Spirit (VOICE)
- 028** The Humanity of Jesus (TPT)
- 029** The Thief (Discernment & Battle) (CSB)
- 030** Humility, Obedience, & Trust (TLB)
- 031** Our Responsibility (With the Lord) (CEB)
- 032** Money, Tithe, & Giving (NLT)
- 033** Loves (NTE)
- 034** Fruit of the Spirit (DLNT)
- 035** Gifts (EXB)
- 036** Armour of God (NIV)
- 037** Repentance & Conscience (GNT)
- 038** The Law (EHV)
- 039** Your Adversary (HCSB)
- 040** Final Judgement (WEB)

I. PURPOSE:

To continue to share with you how I have come to understand the Lord—see *previous Bible Study Lessons 001 – 020*.

Having grown up in a very religious background, my understanding of the Lord was shaped through church doctrine, not the Holy Spirit. I lived in a constant fear of God that caused me much guilt and shame (coming too from a life where guilt and shame was a norm for me with my abusive dad). I portrayed God as I did my dad: love, intermixed with abuse. All the while, constantly trying not to bring on his anger; and feeling like I was never perfect enough to keep his anger at bay. I subconsciously felt I always disappointed my dad—this in turn developed in a conscious feeling that I always disappointed God.

I grew up becoming a defeated human being. And being Born-Again at the age of 16, continued as a defeated Christian. All I did was wait my turn in this world, longing for the day my days on this earth were over and I was with the Lord—even though I often felt that some sin I would commit would instead send me to Hell (not Heaven).

Being the Christian I expected myself had become an impossible chore—yet didn't give up trying—which continued those feelings of guilt and shame when I failed (over and over again). And church didn't help; no matter which one I went to...they all seemed to share the same doctrinal message about me just being a "sinner saved by Grace"; and finding ways to remind me of my sinful nature and perpetual short-comings. I felt church wasn't there to build me up, but to make me an even more miserable Christian than I already was. So, I'd stopped going to church.

My life (and life as a Christian) all began to change when I heard and believed this "un-church" and "un-religious" message about a Loving God and a Holy Spirit indwelling that provided power, authority, and a correct understanding of who God the Father is. So, at age 38, getting Baptised in the Holy Spirit, I stopped being that helpless Christian! And as I grew with His power and authority, knowing too He was not judging or condemning me for any failures, my life (and Christian life) was now a positive that just kept distancing itself from religion, guilt, and shame.

This is my desire too for you. To share with you an understanding of this transformation in my life through how I began to see scripture anew. And that, if you happen to find yourself stuck as a "defeated Christian", or you're tired of being "Bible-thumped" over the head by churches, you deserve the Freedom that you have been given through Christ Jesus. For, no matter what you do, you cannot minimize the True "Agape" Love that the Lord has for you!

II. GUIDANCE:

- A. No matter what I share in this Bible Study booklet, always let the Holy Spirit be the one to interpret what is being said. He will always speak the Truth about a subject or verse, and as I genuinely try and share with His guidance, I will always be growing in the Lord and increasing my knowledge and understanding of Him. Thus, He may share with you in more detail, or more accurately. I am not, and should not be, your only source of understanding—He has given us an array of individuals whom know Him; don't be shy to let Him guide you to hear the right people.
- B. There is no perfect Bible translation. As such, I reference several different ones. I also have found that the Lord has me do an in-depth Greek/Hebrew analysis of verses or key words, and thus come up with a translation that differs from any published ones I can find. In such cases, I refer to the translation version as Provisions of Grace [PoG]. A [PoG] translation stems from the KJV/AKJV with meaning derived from the original Greek/Hebrew. [*Italicized words*] indicate that they are added for clarity or reference, not found in the original.
- C. When referencing "the Cross", I am attributing it to the entire life and ministry of Jesus: including His death, resurrection, ascension, and delivery of the Holy Ghost for and to mankind.
- D. The use of the word "Lord" references the Unified Trinity of God the Father, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit.
- E. Don't be afraid to journal and take notes as you go. Your relationship with the Lord allows you to openly communicate with Him about anything in your life or about this Bible Study. This can feel odd at times if you are still developing a trust with Him; but the more you do it, the more you will recognise His voice and trust Him.

III. GENERAL BELIEFS:

Through a relationship with the Father, we as children of the Father continue to come to understand His Heart. As such, we see that He truly is a Loving Father that is beyond measure and time. His jealousy for all of us is so great and always so good—He really does only want the best for us in any and all situations of life. And this Love was demonstrated through the pure heart and ministry of Jesus Christ—Jesus embodied the Spirit of the Father and in all ways showed us the Heart of the Father. This is what we believe and hold true in our hearts.

The following are beliefs and understandings through scripture that share some of what we hold true about the Love of the Father, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Ghost.

- God the Father Loves everyone in this world. So much so, that through the sacrificial giving of His Only Son (Christ Jesus), He has Gifted us Forgiveness, Righteousness, Health & Healing, and a personal intimate relationship with Him as a Father.
 - [John 3:16-17](#). [Romans 3:21-22](#). [Hebrews 10:12](#). [1 Peter 2:24](#).
- God is Love. This type of Love is not of our own ability, but God's unique "Agape" Love as defined in 1 Corinthians 13:4-8. This Love, and no other, is what is demonstrated to all the world from the Father. And this is the Love we gain in and through ourselves when we accept Him into our hearts. And His only command to us is to Love Him and each other in that Agape Love which only comes from His ability in us.
 - [John 13:24](#). [John 15:12](#). [1 John 3:23](#). [1 John 4:7,16](#). [1 Corinthians 13:4-8](#).
- The Kingdom of Heaven / Kingdom of God is in us now. It is not a place yet to come (a future Heaven / Reign), or a ritual (religious activity); but Power and Righteousness and Peace and Joy in the Holy Spirit.
 - [Matthew 6:33](#). [Luke 17:21](#). [Romans 14:17](#). [1 Corinthians 4:20](#).
- All humans (all men, all women, all races, and all nationalities) are created equally and have always been so. We are all created in the likeness of the Father, Son (Jesus Christ), and Holy Spirit; not only from the beginning of Creation, but now. This was clearly demonstrated in the ministry of Jesus; and is demonstrated now through Christ, to us from the Father, and in the working of the same Holy Spirit with and in both males and females; as well as in all races and nationalities. The Lord is no respecter of persons.
 - [Genesis 1:26-28](#). [Acts 10:34-35](#). [Romans 2:11](#). [Galatians 3:26-28](#). [Colossians 3:9-17](#).
- Righteousness has been Gifted to all through the Completed Work of Christ Jesus. It has been Gifted to all of us by God's Grace through the finished Faith of Christ Jesus; not by our works (self-righteous acts), nor through the Law (which has been fulfilled by Christ). It is unto all, and upon all that believe.
 - [Romans 3:21-22](#). [Galatians 2:16](#). [Ephesians 2:8](#).
- Salvation is the God-Gifted deliverance and preservation of a person out from the ways of self, the world, and Satan; to live a Kingdom life now on earth. It exists for all, and becomes personal (manifests) upon believing in Jesus Christ as our Saviour. It is by God's Grace through Christ's Faith; which we in turn believe, and thus come into salvation. It begins upon believing (being Born-Again), and is fulfilled when a believer dies; guaranteeing eternal existence with the Lord. There is no other way to obtain salvation but by believing in Christ Jesus.
 - [Luke 3:4-6](#). [Acts 4:10-12](#). [Romans 1:16](#). [Romans 10:9-10](#). [Romans 13:11](#). [Ephesians 1:13-14](#).
[Ephesians 2:8-9](#). [Philippians 2:12-13](#). [2 Thessalonians 2:13-14](#). [Titus 2:11](#).
- The Holy Spirit has been gifted to every person on earth. He is with us all, and in all who accept His infilling. And this infilling does not differ from person-to-person (regardless of gender, age, status, culture, or nationality)—for the Lord is no respecter of persons. For we are each given the same Holy Spirit as Jesus has.
 - [John 15:26](#). [John 16:7-11,13](#). [Acts 2:1-18 \(Joel 2:28-29\)](#). [Acts 10:34-35](#). [Romans 2:11](#). [Galatians 3:26-28](#).

- The Holy Spirit does not condemn us of the sins of our flesh; He only brings to light the sin of not believing in Jesus Christ as our Saviour. When we do not accept the testimony of Truth from the Holy Spirit to believe in Christ Jesus, it is that sin of not believing that is not forgiven. However, when we are Born-Again through believing on Him, that sin is forgiven. All other sins (all the sins of the flesh) were forgiven once-and-for-all-time at the Cross, and it is not necessary to ask forgiveness of them.
 - [Matthew 12:30-32](#). [Mark 3:27-30](#). [John 14:6](#). [John 15:26](#). [John 16:7-11,13](#). [Hebrews 10:12](#). [1 John 5:6-11](#).
- Gifts of the Holy Spirit are for all who believe as part of His Kingdom in us now. The Lord has blessed us with all Spiritual blessings and demonstrates Himself through signs and wonders; including miracles, healings, prophesy, words of knowledge, speaking in tongues, and more. Each one of us as believers can operate in all of the Holy Spirit's Gifts, just as Jesus Christ Himself demonstrated and more. They are both a testimony of Christ's accomplishment, and the Lord's Love to both believers and non-believers.
 - [Mark 16:16-18](#). [John 14:12](#). [Acts 4:29-31](#). [Ephesians 1:3](#).

These become a testimony in our lives and relationship with Him. This experiencing of Him is what makes Him so personal—this is His Love towards us and for us. He wants to demonstrate Himself to us, so we can fully understand His Love for everyone on this earth. **God Bless (As He Always Does)**.

IV. RESOURCES:

- A. As you go through these Bible Study lessons, I sometimes refer to my blog that also goes into sharing my relationship with the Lord. This blog is written in a different format than these Bible Studies, so you might garner further insight into a subject through it. So please feel free to visit: www.cbadenhorst.blogspot.com
- B. The following are additional resources referenced throughout this Bible Study Booklet:
 - www.BibleGateway.com
 - www.BlueLetterBible.com
 - www.aHeavenlyWelcome.com
 - www.lhim.org
 - www.GraceAndFaithMinistries.org
 - www.NewCreations.org
 - www.the613commandments.com
 -

V. ACKNOWLEDGEMENT & SUPPORT:

- A. A big THANK YOU to all the family, friends, sponsors, and donors whom have fed into our person lives and ministry. If you would like to support our ministry or part of our outreach, you may do so via our website or at:
 - www.paypal.com/us/fundraiser/charity/2413858
 - www.CrosspointAcademy.co.za
- B. A thank you to our son **Joshua Badenhorst**, whose name was given to us by the Lord.
- C. And most of all, thank you to my wife **Kelly Badenhorst** whom has supported and encouraged me in this journey.

A REDEEMED & RECONCILED (NOT FALLEN) WORLD

INTENTION:

Let's stop blaming Adam and Eve; let's celebrate what God has done through Christ Jesus.

No longer are we under a curse. Nor are we subject to the Devil. Christ Jesus, as a human being, took back what Satan stole and restored humanity's authority over the works of the Devil.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Reconciliation and Redemption.

How we look at the view of the world in which we live can affect how we view ourselves. Too often, when we view this world as still being a “Fallen World” (stemming from Adam’s sin), we can easily become the victim—i.e., fighting to overcome Adam’s transgression and resultant evils in the world. However, we become victors when we realize Christ Jesus overcame Adam’s sin—having eliminated Adam’s curses and the Devil’s authority in our lives. I don’t have to fight to claim something that already has been given me. Thus, it becomes about defending your status (defending your castle) vs. fighting to get it (attacking the castle to claim it).

For me, this realization came about when I was writing a social media post about living in a “Fallen World” when the Holy Spirit abruptly stopped me in my tracks as He spoke to me “Redeemed World”. Before I even had a chance to write “Fallen World”, He corrected me. Wow! How beautiful that is that this world I live in is no longer under Adam’s curse, but redeemed under Christ’s Blood!

Ask yourself: “How does it change my perspective of life if I’m actually living in a Redeemed World (vs. Fallen World), and are already reconciled with God the Father?”

Now, I want to be clear here... when I speak of being redeemed and/or reconciled, I am not speaking about being Saved, Holy, or Righteous. These latter three are only credited you when you believe on Him to be Born-Again.

What is Reconciliation and Redemption the? Simply put, it is a mutual exchange: in that Christ Jesus exchanged Himself (as payment or ransom) for the world:

Reconcile – G604: apokatallassō

1. to reconcile completely
2. to reconcile back again
3. bring back a former state of harmony

Reconciliation – G2643: katallaḡē

1. exchange
 - a. of the business of money changers, exchanging equivalent values
2. adjustment of a difference, reconciliation, restoration to favour
 - a. in the NT of the restoration of the favour of God to sinners that repent and put their trust in the expiatory death of Christ

Reconcile – G2644: katallassō

1. to change, exchange, as coins for others of equivalent value
 - a. to reconcile (those who are at variance)
 - b. return to favour with, be reconciled to one
 - c. to receive one into favour

Reconcile – G1259: diallassō

1. to change
2. to change the mind of anyone, to reconcile
3. to be reconciled, to renew friendship with one

Redeem – G629: apolytrōsis

1. a releasing effected by payment of ransom
 - a. redemption, deliverance
 - b. liberation procured by the payment of a ransom

Redeem – G3084: lytroō

1. to release on receipt of ransom
2. to redeem, liberate by payment of ransom
 - a. to liberate
 - b. to cause to be released to one's self by payment of a ransom
 - c. to redeem
 - d. to deliver: from evils of every kind, internal and external

Knowing we are redeemed and reconciled eliminates an “us and them” mindset when looking at ourselves or others. God, through Christ, equalized the playing-field for humanity; allowing any and all to come to believe in Him. “While we were sinners, He reconciled us”. So, let’s not look at others in their fleshly behaviour, but through the eyes of Christ who unconditionally loves each and every person on this earth!

Furthermore, we need to look at the world around us as also being redeemed from Adam’s curse. And that, though we still see after-effects of that curse, we do not have to accept them as the truth—it is our choice to accept what Christ has done as the real Truth.

A REDEEMED & RECONCILED (NOT FALLEN) WORLD

Bible Study: Lesson 021



II. READINGS: Reconciled / Redeemed

[2 Corinthians 5:14-21](#) (MEV) [PoG]

For the love of Christ constrains us, because we thus judge: that if one died for all, then all have died. 15 And He died for all, that those who live should not from now on live for themselves, but for Him who died for them and rose again. 16 So from now on we do not regard anyone according to the flesh. Yes, though we have known Christ according to the flesh, yet we do not regard Him as such from now on. 17 Therefore, if any man is in Christ, he is a new creature. Old things have passed away. Look, all things have become new. 18 All this is from God, who has reconciled ([G2644](#)) us to Himself through Jesus Christ and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation ([G2643](#)), 19 that is, that God was in Christ reconciling ([G2644](#)) the world to Himself, not counting their sins against them, and has entrusted to us the message of reconciliation ([G2643](#)). 20 So we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were pleading through us. We implore you in Christ's stead: [You are] reconciled ([G2644](#)) to God. 21 God made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

[Romans 5:6-11](#) (MEV)

While we were yet weak, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. 7 Rarely for a righteous man will one die. Yet perhaps for a good man some would even dare to die. 8 But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 How much more then, being now justified by His blood, shall we be saved from wrath through Him. 10 For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled ([G2644](#)) to God by the death of His Son, how much more, being reconciled ([G2644](#)), shall we be saved by His life. 11 Furthermore, we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received reconciliation ([G2643](#)).

[Colossians 1:13-21](#) (MEV)

He has delivered us from the power of darkness and has transferred us into the kingdom of His dear Son, 14 in whom we have redemption ([G629](#)) through His blood, the forgiveness of sins. 15 He is the image of the invisible God and the firstborn of every creature. 16 For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they are thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers. All things were created by Him and for Him. 17 He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. 18 He is the head of the body, the church. He is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, so that in all things He may have the pre-eminence. 19 For it pleased the Father that in Him all fullness should dwell, 20 and to reconcile ([G604](#)) all things to Himself by Him, having made peace through the blood of His cross, by Him, I say—whether they are things in earth, or things in heaven. 21 And you, who were formerly alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now He has reconciled ([G604](#)).

[1 Peter 1:18-21](#) (MEV)

For you know that you were not redeemed ([G3084](#)) from your vain way of life inherited from your fathers with perishable things, like silver or gold, 19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot. 20 He was foreordained before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for you. 21 Through Him you believe in God who raised Him up from the dead and gave Him glory, so that your faith and hope might be in God.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. As a reminder, our sins (and those of the whole world) are atoned for, and we have peace with God. Jesus Christ took upon Himself a double-portion of justice from the Lord to pardon our sins—one for the Jews (ours), another for the Gentiles (the whole world).

A REDEEMED & RECONCILED (NOT FALLEN) WORLD

Bible Study: Lesson 021



[Isaiah 40:1-3](#) (MEV) [PoG]

Comfort, O comfort, My people, says your God. 2 Speak kindly to Jerusalem, and cry to her that her warfare has ended, that her iniquity has been pardoned, that she has received of the hand of the Lord double for all her sins.

3 The voice of him who cries out, "Prepare the way of the Lord in the wilderness, make straight in the desert a highway for our God." [*referring to John the Baptist*].

[1 John 2:2](#) (MEV)

He is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

[Luke 2:13-14](#) (MEV)

Suddenly there was with the angel a company of the heavenly host praising God and saying, 14 "Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, and good will toward men."

Question: Do you struggle with knowing that your sins against God are already forgiven you? Do you feel you have peace with God (that He is at peace with you)?

Response:

B. Christ removed the curse of the Law (given to the Israelites, yet created animosity between them and the Gentiles):

[Galatians 3:10-14](#) (MEV)

For all who rely on the works of the law are under the curse. For it is written, "Cursed is everyone who does not continue in all things which are written in the Book of the Law, to do them." 11 Now it is evident that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, for "The just shall live by faith." 12 But the law is not of faith, for "The man who does them shall live by them." 13 Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law by being made a curse for us—as it is written, "Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree"— 14 so that the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

[Ephesians 2:11-18](#) (MEV)

Therefore remember that formerly you, the Gentiles in the flesh, who are called the "uncircumcision" by the so-called "circumcision" in the flesh by human hands, 12 were at that time apart from Christ, alienated from the citizenship of Israel and strangers to the covenants of promise, without hope and without God in the world. 13 But now in Christ Jesus you who were formerly far away have been brought near by the blood of Christ.

14 For He is our peace, who has made both groups one and has broken down the barrier of the dividing wall, 15 by abolishing in His flesh the enmity, that is, the law of the commandments contained in ordinances, that in Himself He might make the two into one new man, thus making peace, 16 and that He might reconcile both to God into one body through the cross, thereby slaying the enmity. 17 And He came and preached peace to you who were far away and peace to those who were near. 18 For through Him we both have access by one Spirit to the Father.

Question: Have you ever tried to obey the Law? Did you feel guilty after failing to live up to it?

Response:

C. Christ removed Adam's curse of thorns and thistles:

[Genesis 3:17b-18](#) (MEV)

Cursed is the ground on account of you; in hard labour you will eat of it all the days of your life. 18 Thorns and thistles it will bring forth for you, and you will eat the plants of the field.

[Matthew 27:27-31](#) (MEV)

Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the Praetorium and gathered the whole detachment of soldiers before Him. 28 They stripped Him and put a scarlet robe on Him, 29 and when they wove a crown of thorns, they put it on His head and put a staff in His right hand. They knelt before Him and mocked Him, saying, "Hail, King of the Jews!" 30 They spit on Him, and took the staff and hit Him on the head. 31 After they had mocked Him, they took the robe off Him, put His own garments on Him, and led Him away to crucify Him.

Question: Adam's curse created the thorns to hurt and mock Jesus with; but Jesus's blood from those thorns redeemed that curse ([1 Peter 1:18-21](#)). What are ways we can acknowledge that Adam's curse was removed?

Response:

D. Christ took away Eve's curse of childbirth pains/hardships and removed the curse of servitude to males (refer 'E'):
Additional resource: <https://aheavenlywelcome.com/what-is-gods-heart-for-your-birth/>

[Genesis 3:16a](#) (MEV) [PoG]

To the woman He said, "I will greatly multiply your [pain, labour, hardship, sorrow, toil] in childbirth, and in pain you will bring forth children; your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you."

[1 Timothy 2:13-15](#) (MEV) [PoG]

For Adam was formed first, then Eve. 14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman, being deceived, fell into sin. 15 [Moreover] she will be saved [through, during] childbearing [childbirth] if [she continues] in faith, love, and holiness, with self-control [soundness of mind].

Question: Did Jesus really take away that curse of Eve and pain in childbirth? Is it possible that God wants a woman to experience a joyous time of childbirth (and even a trouble-free pregnancy)?

Response:

- E. Christ demonstrated equality for all (going against all human-based, curse-based, or religious-based patriarchy and discrimination/racism). Even from the start, the Lord created male and female equally (both in the image of the Lord); from which all races stemmed equally from. The “Fall” created the divide from what has always been equal in the eyes of the Lord—this is why He refers to both male and female as “sons” (equal):

[Genesis 1:27](#) (MEV)

So God created man ([H120](#): human beings) in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.

[Galatians 3:26-28](#) (MEV)

You are all sons of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, and there is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.

[Romans 16:7](#) (MEV)

Greet Andronicus and Junia ([G2458](#): a female apostle), my kinsmen and fellow prisoners, who are noteworthy among the apostles, who also came to Christ before me.

Question: Do you feel discriminated by others or by religion? Do you discriminate against others because of it?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. God fulfilled His own requirement of reconciliation in the manner He instructions for us to do it:

[Matthew 5:23-24](#) (MEV)

“Therefore, if you bring your gift to the altar and there remember that your brother has something against you, 24 leave your gift there before the altar and go on your way. First be reconciled ([G1259](#)) to your brother, and then come and offer your gift.

Thoughts: We have to remember that God will not instruct us to do something He Himself doesn’t do. Thus, when we view this verse through the perspective of God, we can see how He and Christ did this process.

Jesus was the gift ([G1435](#), sacrifice) that God was bringing to the alter. But knew that His brother (humanity) had something against Him—this is an important part, because it is not saying that God had something against humanity, it is that humanity had something against God (in our imaginations... [Colossians 1:21](#)). So, before Jesus was sacrificed for us, He went about through Jesus, demonstrating He was not against humanity, but brought humanity nearer to Him. He showed us His true character and nature to overcome those imaginations we had against Him; and only then did He proceed with sacrificing His only Son for us.

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

INTENTION:

We should never believe that who we are is what we do.

As a believer, regardless of what you do, it cannot take away your God-Gifted Title of Righteous.

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Righteousness, as well as Holiness and Sanctification.

For me, I grew up believing righteousness was my responsibility...that I had a duty to perform to a standard of righteousness. Yet, every time I tried to live a life never sinning (i.e. breaking an old-testament Law), I failed. And this failure always led to extreme feelings of self-disappointment, guilt, and shame. What I tried to do I did in the confidence of my own ability...confidence in my own flesh's ability to achieve it.

But righteousness is not some moral compass or means to achieve something; righteousness must be viewed as what it really is: a state of existence. This existence can never be achieved through our own means-and-methods, it can only manifest itself upon you in believing in Christ Jesus. When you believe and are "Born-Again", you are justified ([G1344](#) – to render righteous, to declare, pronounce, one to be just, righteous). This Righteousness is gifted upon you, not because you "earned" it, but because you deserve it as a child of God! This is how much He truly Loves you—that He crowns you with righteousness and defines you as Holy. You are given these titles that cannot change based on your behaviour; as it is not based on what you do or don't do, but it is based on whom Jesus Christ is. Our behaviour cannot change that Jesus Christ is Holy and Righteous...for "as He is in this world, so are we" ([1 John 4:17](#)).

This is how we can see true Christians falter in their behaviours, yet still seem blessed and cared for by the Lord. For we can live the most sinful life as a Born-Again believer and still experience the complete presence of the Lord in our life. Sin can never undo the titles of Righteousness and Holiness. We covered much of this in previous lessons regarding our already-forgiven sins of the flesh at the Cross; and the forgiven Sin of Unbelief at being Born-Again. As well as the three types of Christians Jesus spoke of with the parable of the seeds and sower ([Mark 4:1-20](#)).

As a non-believer (non-Christian), we can never reach a level of "right living" that will elevate us into heaven or some "higher plain of existence" with the Lord; nor can it bring about our salvation. The first mistake we make in life takes away any righteousness, which can never be undone—except by belief in Christ Jesus, inheriting His Righteousness.

And as Christians, we must never see our personal self as anything short of (less than) Righteous and Holy. Let us stop trying to achieve those through actions or inactions (of the flesh) when we already have been made them.

This is what we will see in Paul's life as he shares in [Philippians 3](#) (following). As a "Pharisee of Pharisees", he attempted salvation by self-righteousness through his flesh. But came to realize that his self-attempt was but worthless (garbage) to the achievement of inheriting Christ's Righteousness.

II. READING: [Philippians 3:1-11](#) (AMP)

Finally, my fellow believers, continue to rejoice and delight in the Lord. To write the same things again is no trouble for me, and it is a safeguard for you.

2 Look out for the dogs [the Judaizers, the legalists], look out for the troublemakers, look out for the false circumcision [those who claim circumcision is necessary for salvation]; 3 for we [who are born-again have been reborn from above—spiritually transformed, renewed, set apart for His purpose and] are the true circumcision, who worship in the Spirit of God and glory and take pride and exult in Christ Jesus and place no confidence [in what we have or who we are] in the flesh— 4 though I myself might have [some grounds for] confidence in the flesh [if I were pursuing salvation by works]. If anyone else thinks that he has reason to be confident in the flesh [that is, in his own efforts to achieve salvation], I have far more: 5 circumcised when I was eight days old, of the nation of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews [an exemplary Hebrew]; as to the [observance of the] Law, a Pharisee; 6 as to my zeal [for Jewish tradition], a persecutor of the church; and as to righteousness [supposed right living] which [my fellow Jews believe] is in the Law, I proved myself blameless.

7 But whatever former things were gains to me [as I thought then], these things [once regarded as advancements in merit] I have come to consider as loss [absolutely worthless] for the sake of Christ [and the purpose which He has given

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



my life]. 8 But more than that, I count everything as loss compared to the priceless privilege and supreme advantage of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord [and of growing more deeply and thoroughly acquainted with Him—a joy unequalled]. For His sake I have lost everything, and I consider it all garbage, so that I may gain Christ, 9 and may be found in Him [believing and relying on Him], not having any righteousness of my own derived from [my obedience to] the Law and its rituals, but [possessing] that [genuine righteousness] which comes through faith in Christ, the righteousness which comes from God on the basis of faith. 10 And this, so that I may know Him [experientially, becoming more thoroughly acquainted with Him, understanding the remarkable wonders of His Person more completely] and [in that same way experience] the power of His resurrection [which overflows and is active in believers], and [that I may share] the fellowship of His sufferings, by being continually conformed [inwardly into His likeness even] to His death [dying as He did]; 11 so that I may attain to the resurrection [that will raise me] from the dead.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Many of the opening lines in the letters of the New Testament contain the phrase “to the saints in”. This word saint does not refer to some select believers or higher-up Christians. This word saint is the word holy—the exact same word in the Greek: *hagios* (G40) – most holy. Also called Sanctified: *hagiazō* (G37, derived from G40) – to make holy. As a Born-Again believer, you have been Sanctified and are perpetually Most Holy!

1 Corinthians 1:2 (AMP)

To the church of God in Corinth, to those sanctified (set apart, made holy) in Christ Jesus, who are selected and called as saints (God’s people), together with all those who in every place call on and honour the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, their Lord and ours.

Ephesians 1:1 (AMP)

Paul, an apostle (special messenger, personally chosen representative) of Christ Jesus (the Messiah, the Anointed), by the will of God [that is, by His purpose and choice], to the saints (God’s people) who are at Ephesus and are faithful and loyal and steadfast in Christ Jesus.

Jude 1:1 (AKJV)

Jude, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called.

Question: Do you think and consider yourself as Holy?

Response:

- B. We personally cannot sanctify ourselves (make ourself holy), it is only Christ Jesus that can. The book of Hebrews shares that process done by Christ and how we as believers inherit this upon being Born-Again.

Hebrews 2:9-11 (AMP)

But we do see Jesus, who was made lower than the angels for a little while [by taking on the limitations of humanity], crowned with glory and honour because of His suffering of death, so that by the grace of God [extended to sinners] He might experience death for [the sins of] everyone.

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



10 For it was fitting for God [that is, an act worthy of His divine nature] that He, for whose sake are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, should make the author and founder of their salvation perfect through suffering [bringing to maturity the human experience necessary for Him to be perfectly equipped for His office as High Priest]. 11 Both Jesus who sanctifies and those who are sanctified [that is, spiritually transformed, made holy, and set apart for God’s purpose] are all from one Father; for this reason He is not ashamed to call them brothers and sisters.

[Hebrews 10:10](#) (AMP)

And in accordance with this will [of God] we [who believe in the message of salvation] have been sanctified [that is, set apart as holy for God and His purposes] through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed) once for all.

[Hebrews 10:14](#) (AKJV)

For by one offering he hath perfected forever them that are sanctified.

Question: What does it mean to you that you have been sanctified [that is, spiritually transformed, made holy, and set apart for God’s purpose]?

Response:

- C. When we look at the word Holy, we must accept and acknowledge in our hearts that there is only one kind of Holy. This is not only what is and is defined by the Lord, but is the same Holy applied to us as Born-Again believers. As such, there are not varying types or levels of “holiness”, there is only one Holy. So, when we are made Holy, it is the exact same Holiness that exists for God the Father, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit. We all (whether male/female, young/old, Jew/Gentile) share that same Holiness! We have the Spirit of God indwelling us (as His Holy Temple)—He could not do so if we did not have His Holiness; nor if it could not be maintained.

[Ephesians 1:3-4](#) (AMP)

Blessed and worthy of praise be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly realms in Christ, 4 just as [in His love] He chose us in Christ [actually selected us for Himself as His own] before the foundation of the world, so that we would be holy [that is, consecrated, set apart for Him, purpose-driven] and blameless in His sight. In love.

[Colossians 1:19-23](#) (AMP)

For it pleased the Father for all the fullness [of deity—the sum total of His essence, all His perfection, powers, and attributes] to dwell [permanently] in Him (the Son), 20 and through [the intervention of] the Son to reconcile all things to Himself, making peace [with believers] through the blood of His cross; through Him, [I say,] whether things on earth or things in heaven.

21 And although you were at one time estranged and alienated and hostile-minded [toward Him], participating in evil things, 22 yet Christ has now reconciled you [to God] in His physical body through death, in order to present you before the Father holy and blameless and beyond reproach— 23 [and He will do this] if you continue in the faith, well-grounded and steadfast, and not shifting away from the [confident] hope [that is a

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



result] of the gospel that you have heard, which was proclaimed in all creation under heaven, and of which [gospel] I, Paul, was made a minister.

[1 Corinthians 3:16-17](#) [PoG]

Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? If anyone defiles the temple of God, this *defilement* shall God destroy; for you are that holy temple of God.

Question: How can I still be Holy if I still sin?

Response:

- D. Just as we are made Holy when we believe and are Born-Again, the same is true for Righteousness. This understanding that our own means-and-methods to try and obtain self-righteousness cannot in any way compare to the righteousness we receive from Christ Jesus. This is a free gift from Him—gifted out to anyone whom wants it, but only manifest upon the people whom chose to believe in Him [“unto all and upon all them that believe” ([Romans 3:22 AKJV](#))].

[Romans 3:20-24](#) (AMP)

For no person will be justified [freed of guilt and declared righteous] in His sight by [trying to do] the works of the Law. For through the Law we become conscious of sin [and the recognition of sin directs us toward repentance, but provides no remedy for sin].

21 But now the righteousness of God has been clearly revealed [independently and completely] apart from the Law, though it is [actually] confirmed by the Law and the [words and writings of the] Prophets. 22 This righteousness of God comes through faith in Jesus Christ for all those [Jew or Gentile] who believe [and trust in Him and acknowledge Him as God’s Son]. There is no distinction, 23 since all have sinned and continually fall short of the glory of God, 24 and are being justified [declared free of the guilt of sin, made acceptable to God, and granted eternal life] as a gift by His [precious, undeserved] grace, through the redemption [the payment for our sin] which is [provided] in Christ Jesus.

[Matthew 25:46](#) (AMP)

Then these [unbelieving people] will go away into eternal (unending) punishment, but those who are righteous and in right standing with God [will go, by His remarkable grace] into eternal (unending) life.”

Question: As Jesus shares in Matthew above, righteousness is the requirement for “eternal unending life” with the Lord. Yet, not one’s own personal righteousness (right-doing), but an inheritance (a right-standing) of His Righteousness upon believing in Him. Do you believe in Jesus Christ?

Response:

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. When you study-out all the verses pertaining to righteousness (including sanctification and holiness), it may seem like it is talking about an action, not an identity. Some of this can be seen in a few passages in 1 John. And as such, want to tackle them to help clarify the meanings of them. I will be looking at the AKJV / NKJV versions with PoG definitions and *clarifications* (not using the AMP version as have for this lesson). And when I mention the phrases “*that is to continue in belief*” and “*abides as righteous*”, I am referring to the state of remaining and continuing to be Born-Again (which happened upon believing in Christ Jesus). As John defines abiding: “Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he [*abides*] in God.” ([1 John 4:15](#))

[1 John 2:1-2](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

My little children [*fellow believers with John whom he disciples*], these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father [*a comforting reminder to us and the Father that Christ bore all our sins of the flesh*], Jesus Christ the righteous [*having also obtained that same righteous title as believers*]. 2 And He Himself is the propitiation [*an appeasing atonement*] for our sins, and not for ours only [*believers*], but also for the whole world [*non-believers*].

[1 John 2:26-29](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive you. 27 But the anointing [Holy Spirit] which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing [Holy Spirit] teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide [*remain in a state or condition*] in Him.

28 And now, little children, abide [*remain in a state or condition—that is to continue in belief*] in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming. 29 If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone who [~~practices righteousness~~] has been made and abides as righteous—*that is having been Born-Again*] is born of Him.

[1 John 3:4-9](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. 5 And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. 6 Whoever abides [*remains in a state or condition—that is to continue in belief*] in Him does not sin [*that being the sin of not believing in Him*]. Whoever sins [*that being the sin of not believing in Him*] has neither seen Him nor known Him.

7 Little children, let no one deceive you. He who [~~practices righteousness~~] has been made and abides as righteous] is righteous, just as He is righteous. 8 He who sins [*that is the sin of not believing in Him*] is of the devil, for the devil has sinned [*not believed God*] from the beginning. For this purpose, the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. 9 Whoever has been born of God does not sin [*that is the sin of not believing in Him*], for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin [*that is the sin of not believing in Him*], because he has been born of God [*Born Again*].

Thoughts: When we understand that righteousness is not something achieved or lost through action/inaction, we can acknowledge it as a state of existence. Our IDENTITY is righteous, and as a believer, we always (perpetually) abide in Him as righteous (exist as righteous).

SALVATION / SAVED

INTENTION:

No matter what you are facing in this life, you can be freed (saved) from its power over you.

Our Salvation into Eternal Life with the Lord is brought to us by Christ Jesus for us to believe into that Salvation.

But also, we are and can be Saved from the perils, diseases, strongholds, and obstacles we face on this earth—we just need to allow Him into those aspects of our Spirit, Heart, Soul, Mind, and Body.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Salvation, including the term Saved.

It is Christ Jesus who did what He did through the completion of the Cross and sending of the Holy Spirit that brings Salvation and His desire for us to be Saved.

I am using two different words and definitions here to go into what it means for both in scripture. Let's start with their meanings in the Greek:

Salvation – G4991: sōtēria

1. deliverance, preservation, safety, salvation
 - a. deliverance from the molestation of enemies
 - b. in an ethical sense, that which concludes to the soul's safety or salvation
 - i. of Messianic salvation
2. salvation as the present possession of all true Christians
3. future salvation, the sum of benefits and blessings which the Christians, redeemed from all earthly ills, will enjoy after the visible return of Christ from heaven in the consummated and eternal kingdom of God.

Saved – G4982: sōzō

1. to save, keep safe and sound, to rescue from danger or destruction
 - a. one (from injury or peril)
 - i. to save a suffering one (from perishing), i.e. one suffering from disease, to make well, heal, restore to health
 - ii. to preserve one who is in danger of destruction, to save or rescue
 - b. to save in the technical biblical sense
 - i. negatively
 - to deliver from the penalties of the Messianic judgment
 - to save from the evils which obstruct the reception of the Messianic deliverance

When we go through the different readings and related verses, we will see how both Salvation and Saved applies to us in the right NOW, in the future, and in both the physical and spiritual. We must not just see these terms as happening in the “distant future”, but how it uniquely and personally relates to all my being (Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, and Spirit). In this sense, we are: saved, being saved, and reserved for salvation.

We will also tackle the notion of whether we can “lose” our salvation.

II. READING: Salvation / Saved is only through Jesus Christ:

John 12:44-50 (NABRE)

Jesus cried out and said, “Whoever believes in me believes not only in me but also in the one who sent me, 45 and whoever sees me sees the one who sent me. 46 I came into the world as light, so that everyone who believes in me might not remain in darkness. 47 And if anyone hears my words and does not observe them, I do not condemn him, for I did not come to condemn the world but to save (G4982) the world. 48 Whoever rejects me and does not accept my words has something to judge him: the word that I spoke, it will condemn him on the last day, 49 because I did not speak on my own, but the Father who sent me commanded me what to say and speak. 50 And I know that his commandment is eternal life. So what I say, I say as the Father told me.”

Acts 4:8-12 (NABRE) [PoG]

Then Peter, filled with the holy Spirit, answered them, “Leaders of the people and elders: 9 If we are being examined today about a good deed done to a cripple, namely, by what means he was saved (G4982), 10 then all of you and all the people of Israel should know that it was in the name of Jesus Christ the Nazorean whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead; in his name this man stands before you healed [(G5199: restored to health)]. 11 He is ‘the stone

rejected by you, the builders, which has become the cornerstone.’ 12 There is no salvation ([G4991](#)) through anyone else, nor is there any other name under heaven given to the human race by which we are to be saved ([G4982](#)).”

[Romans 1:16-17](#) (NABRE)

For I am not ashamed of the gospel. It is the power of God for the salvation ([G4991](#)) of everyone who believes: for Jew first, and then Greek. 17 For in it is revealed the righteousness of God from faith to faith; as it is written, “The one who is righteous by faith will live.”

[Ephesians 1:7-14](#) (NABRE)

In him we have redemption by his blood, the forgiveness of transgressions, in accord with the riches of his grace 8 that he lavished upon us. In all wisdom and insight, 9 he has made known to us the mystery of his will in accord with his favour that he set forth in him 10 as a plan for the fullness of times, to sum up all things in Christ, in heaven and on earth.

11 In him we were also chosen, destined in accord with the purpose of the One who accomplishes all things according to the intention of his will, 12 so that we might exist for the praise of his glory, we who first hoped in Christ. 13 In him you also, who have heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation ([G4991](#)), and have believed in him, were sealed with the promised holy Spirit, 14 which is the first instalment of our inheritance toward redemption as God’s possession, to the praise of his glory.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. When we believe, we are sealed with the Holy Spirit; and through Christ Jesus is that means to Salvation. We are placed into Salvation when we believe, and fully inherit it upon the completion of our life here on earth—that is either when we die (Christian ‘sleep’), or when the Lord comes again. In that sense, with our time here on earth, we “work out our salvation”—in that we hold onto that hope of salvation (preserving it) until it becomes fulfilled at the end of our life; and while doing so, embrace the deliverance Christ Jesus has given us in the now.

[Romans 13:11](#) (NABRE)

And do this because you know the time; it is the hour now for you to awake from sleep. For our salvation is nearer now than when we first believed.

[Philippians 2:12-13](#) (NABRE)

So then, my beloved, obedient as you have always been, not only when I am present but all the more now when I am absent, work out your salvation with fear and trembling. 13 For God is the one who, for his good purpose, works in you both to desire and to work.

[1 Thessalonians 5:8-10](#) (NABRE)

But since we are of the day, let us be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love and the helmet that is hope for salvation. 9 For God did not destine us for wrath, but to gain ([G4047](#): preserve) salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, 10 who died for us, so that whether we are awake or asleep we may live together with him.

[Hebrews 9:26b-28](#) (NABRE)

But now once for all he has appeared at the end of the ages to take away sin by his sacrifice. 27 Just as it is appointed that human beings die once, and after this the judgment, 28 so also Christ, offered once to take away the sins of many, will appear a second time, not to take away sin but to bring salvation to those who eagerly await him.

[1 Peter 1:3-9](#) (NABRE)

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who in his great mercy gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 to an inheritance that is imperishable, undefiled, and unfading, kept in heaven for you 5 who by the power of God are safeguarded through faith, to a salvation that is ready to be revealed in the final time. 6 In this you rejoice, although now for a little while you may have to suffer through various trials, 7 so that the genuineness of your faith, more precious than gold that is perishable even though tested by fire, may prove to be for praise, glory, and honour at the revelation of Jesus Christ. 8 Although you have not seen him you love him; even though you do not see him now yet believe in him, you rejoice with an indescribable and glorious joy, 9 as you attain the goal of [your] faith, the salvation of your souls.

Question: In the meaning of the word Salvation it says: “deliverance, preservation, safety, salvation—deliverance from the molestation of enemies”. What does that mean to you in the ‘here and now’?

Response:

- B. This Salvation is because we are Saved by believing in Jesus Christ, which leads us to that fulfilment of Salvation.

[Romans 10:9-13](#) (NABRE)

For, if you confess with your mouth that Jesus is Lord and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. 10 For one believes with the heart and so is justified, and one confesses with the mouth and so is saved. 11 For the scripture says, “No one who believes in him will be put to shame.” 12 For there is no distinction between Jew and Greek; the same Lord is Lord of all, enriching all who call upon him. 13 For “everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.”

[Ephesians 2:4-8](#) (NABRE)

But God, who is rich in mercy, because of the great love he had for us, 5 even when we were dead in our transgressions, brought us to life with Christ (by grace you have been saved), 6 raised us up with him, and seated us with him in the heavens in Christ Jesus, 7 that in the ages to come he might show the immeasurable riches of his grace in his kindness to us in Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace you have been saved through faith, and this is not from you; it is the gift of God.

[2 Timothy 4:18](#) (NABRE)

The Lord will rescue me from every evil threat and will bring me safe ([G4982](#)) to his heavenly kingdom. To him be glory forever and ever. Amen.

Question: What can we personally do to recognise this Saving in our life now—aspects of being Saved that do or can manifest themselves in our day-to-day lives?

Response:

- C. The saving that comes from Jesus Christ encompasses anything to do with one's being (Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, and Spirit). As we read in Acts 4:8-12 above, we see this saving of the crippled man was physical (in his body). We must not reject that Christ wants us to be healed in the physical; as "healing" and "saving" are often shared in meaning in the context of a physical healing (of which Christ took upon Himself).

[1 Peter 2:24](#) (NABRE)

He himself bore our sins in his body upon the cross, so that, free from sin, we might live for righteousness. By his wounds you have been healed ([G2390](#)).

[Mark 5:25-34](#) (NABRE)

There was a woman afflicted with haemorrhages for twelve years. 26 She had suffered greatly at the hands of many doctors and had spent all that she had. Yet she was not helped but only grew worse. 27 She had heard about Jesus and came up behind him in the crowd and touched his cloak. 28 She said, "If I but touch his clothes, I shall be cured ([G4982](#))."

29 Immediately her flow of blood dried up. She felt in her body that she was healed ([G2390](#)) of her affliction. 30 Jesus, aware at once that power had gone out from him, turned around in the crowd and asked, "Who has touched my clothes?" 31 But his disciples said to him, "You see how the crowd is pressing upon you, and yet you ask, 'Who touched me?'" 32 And he looked around to see who had done it. 33 The woman, realizing what had happened to her, approached in fear and trembling. She fell down before Jesus and told him the whole truth. 34 He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has saved ([G4982](#)) you. Go in peace and be cured ([G5199](#)) of your affliction."

[Mark 6:55-56](#) (NABRE)

They scurried about the surrounding country and began to bring in the sick on mats to wherever they heard he was. 56 Whatever villages or towns or countryside he entered, they laid the sick in the marketplaces and begged him that they might touch only the tassel on his cloak; and as many as touched it were healed ([G4982](#)).

Question: Does your heart and mind accept or reject that the Lord wants you to have physical healing?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. Can we "lose" our Salvation? No, not in the sense of it being as though we misplace it (i.e. like we would "lose" a coin). But we can reject Salvation; even after being Saved. What this means is that it is our choice to believe in Christ Jesus to be Saved; and thus, also our choice to un-believe even after we chose to believe on Him and are Born-Again. It is not a result of "losing" something by mistake or error, but by literally choosing to reject Jesus Christ in His entirety to no longer be Born-Again. No sin of the flesh can do this; we don't lose our Holiness or Salvation when we commit a sin of the flesh. Remember, those were all bore at the Cross once-and-for-all-time. It is only the Sin of again not believing in Him for Salvation that will remove us from being Saved unto Salvation.

This is addressed specifically in Hebrews 6:1-6 which describes what we have to experience before knowingly rejecting Jesus Christ outright after believing. We cannot Crucify Christ a second time; nor, in that sense, be "Born-Again-Again". Ephesians talks about unsealing ourselves from the Holy Spirit. Hebrews 10 and 2 Peter 2 talks about rejecting Him; with Romans 11 discussing the analogy of Olive Branches being "grafted in" through belief, and "cut off" in unbelief (being cut off even after being grafted in through belief).

[Romans 11:19-24](#) (NABRE)

Indeed you will say, “Branches were broken off so that I might be grafted in.” 20 That is so. They were broken off because of unbelief, but you are there because of faith. So do not become haughty, but stand in awe. 21 For if God did not spare the natural branches, [perhaps] he will not spare you either. 22 See, then, the kindness and severity of God: severity toward those who fell, but God’s kindness to you, provided you remain in his kindness; otherwise you too will be cut off. 23 And they also, if they do not remain in unbelief, will be grafted in, for God is able to graft them in again. 24 For if you were cut from what is by nature a wild olive tree, and grafted, contrary to nature, into a cultivated one, how much more will they who belong to it by nature be grafted back into their own olive tree.

[Ephesians 1:13-14; 4:30](#) (NABRE) [PoG]

13 In him you also, who have heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation, and have believed in him, were sealed with the promised holy Spirit, 14 which is the first instalment of our inheritance toward redemption as God’s possession, to the praise of his glory.

30 And do not grieve the holy Spirit of God [*through the Sin of un-believing in Jesus Christ*], with which you were sealed for the day of redemption.

[Hebrews 6:1-6](#) (NABRE)

Therefore, let us leave behind the basic teaching about Christ and advance to maturity, without laying the foundation all over again: repentance from dead works and faith in God, 2 instruction about baptisms and laying on of hands, resurrection of the dead and eternal judgment. 3 And we shall do this, if only God permits. 4 For it is impossible in the case of those who have once been enlightened and tasted the heavenly gift and shared in the holy Spirit 5 and tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, 6 and then have fallen away, to bring them to repentance again, since they are re-crucifying the Son of God for themselves and holding him up to contempt.

[Hebrews 10:26-29](#) (NABRE) [PoG]

If we sin [*the Sin of un-believing in Jesus Christ*] deliberately after receiving knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains sacrifice for sins 27 but a fearful prospect of judgment and a flaming fire that is going to consume the adversaries. 28 Anyone who rejects the law of Moses is put to death without pity on the testimony of two or three witnesses. 29 Do you not think that a much worse punishment is due the one who has contempt for the Son of God, considers unclean the covenant-blood by which he was consecrated, and insults the spirit of grace?

[2 Peter 2:20-22](#) (NABRE) [PoG]

For if they, having escaped the defilements of the world through the [precise and correct knowledge of our] Lord and saviour Jesus Christ, again become entangled and overcome by them, their last condition is worse than their first. 21 For it would have been better for them not to have known [to be fully acquainted with] the way of righteousness than after knowing it to turn back from the holy commandment handed down to them. 22 What is expressed in the true proverb has happened to them, “The dog returns to its own vomit,” and “A bathed sow returns to wallowing in the mire.”

Thoughts: It is that we can reject Salvation after being Born-Again; but have confidence (because God keeps us sealed) that you cannot accidentally “lose” it by mistake. Nor will He Himself reject you or remove you from Salvation because we might think He is “unhappy” with us (your sins are perpetually forgiven). We must believe and remain in that belief, for us to reach (achieve) Salvation at His coming or our death (Christian ‘sleep’). Just as you accept Him in your heart into Salvation, you have to reject Him in your heart to deny your Salvation.

GOD ALLOWED IT?

INTENTION:

Don't blame God for the misfortunes of this world.

He is the Author of Life, not hardship or death.

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the saying about whether or not “God Allowed It”.

Sometimes we see this as said in the questions: “Why does evil exist?” or “Why does God allow evil?”.

But these questions boil down to humanity trying to understand the Character and Nature of God and questioning whether He is in control or even exists. We would like to think that God “sovereignly” chooses when things happen, if it is to happen, and why it happens—whether it be a natural disaster (like a hurricane or earthquake), sickness, accident, or unanswered prayer.

To ask the question, “Why does God allow evil?”, is usually in the context of harm done to us or others. We want God to keep people and things from hurting other people (and hurting us personally). Yet, with that question, do we also ask ourself, “Why does God allow ME to do evil?”

From the beginning of Creation, God has only wanted the best for us. He designed a world free from hurt and pain and evil. And in that perfect place, did not design us as programmed robots. He designed us with Free Will: the ability to make our own decision to choose Him (Life) or choose death ([Genesis 2:16-17](#) and [Deuteronomy 30:11-20](#))—further giving us understanding that it’s the Thief that comes to Kill, Steal, and Destroy—not Him ([John 10:10](#)).

This same God-Given means to chose for ourselves, regardless of the consequences, is still active now. We make choices for ourself that bring us in alignment (or not) with His Will, affecting both ourselves and those around us.

In the desire to want God to be All-Powerful, we make it as though we do not have to take responsibility for our own actions. That way, when something doesn’t go the way WE want it to, there is someone to blame but ourselves (blame as an individual or humanity as a whole). And if we don’t like what we see, or do not want to believe God is All Good, we create doctrines and confusions of God—even though Christ Jesus demonstrated to us the exact identity of who God is. We may even deny the existence of God because we can’t fathom a God who would allow a person to have a Free Will to do harm (disguised in the question of God allowing evil).

The term “evil” above, is used as a verb with the actions of being: morally reprehensible, arising from actual or imputed bad character or conduct... ([Merriam-Webster](#)). But in the context of the Bible, that definition is just talking about the sins that people commit. When Jesus used the word ‘evil’, He referenced people that do not believe in Him for Salvation—‘evil’ as a state of being ([Matthew 7:11](#)); just as we saw with Righteousness as a state of being.

As such, when we question God as to why He allows bad things to happen, we are talking about why sin exists—because, regardless of whether you are a Born-Again believer or not, we still commit sins (as we have discussed in previous Bible Lessons). Sin is anything God does not want for us. But these sins of the flesh, as we know, were forever taken away at the Cross. The Sin of not believing (being Evil) is only removed upon believing in Jesus Christ.

But that is not what we are discussing here—we are here to really talk about whether God can somehow control us (violating our Free Will) and thus “allows” things to happen or not based on a decision He makes in that specific moment. Implying that God was witness to something He could alter with His Power, but for some reason “chose” not to. Or more specifically, this is asking the question: can God make someone do sinful “evil” things?

In short, the answer to these questions is that He cannot violate our Free Will; instead, He instructs us in what to do, even providing us the power and ability to choose Life over Death. And does so through guidance; not forcing, not hardening, not coercing, not manipulating, not bullying. The choice is ours.

II. READING: We limit God in and through us.

[Ephesians 3:4-21](#) (MSG)

As you read over what I have written to you, you’ll be able to see for yourselves into the mystery of Christ. None of our ancestors understood this. Only in our time has it been made clear by God’s Spirit through his holy apostles and

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



prophets of this new order. The mystery is that people who have never heard of God and those who have heard of him all their lives (what I've been calling outsiders and insiders) stand on the same ground before God. They get the same offer, same help, same promises in Christ Jesus. The Message is accessible and welcoming to everyone, across the board.

7-8 This is my life work: helping people understand and respond to this Message. It came as a sheer gift to me, a real surprise, God handling all the details. When it came to presenting the Message to people who had no background in God's way, I was the least qualified of any of the available Christians. God saw to it that I was equipped, but you can be sure that it had nothing to do with my natural abilities.

8-10 And so here I am, preaching and writing about things that are way over my head, the inexhaustible riches and generosity of Christ. My task is to bring out in the open and make plain what God, who created all this in the first place, has been doing in secret and behind the scenes all along. Through followers of Jesus like yourselves gathered in churches, this extraordinary plan of God is becoming known and talked about even among the angels!

11-13 All this is proceeding along lines planned all along by God and then executed in Christ Jesus. When we trust in him, we're free to say whatever needs to be said, bold to go wherever we need to go. So don't let my present trouble on your behalf get you down. Be proud!

14-19 My response is to get down on my knees before the Father, this magnificent Father who parcels out all heaven and earth. I ask him to strengthen you by his Spirit—not a brute strength but a glorious inner strength—that Christ will live in you as you open the door and invite him in. And I ask him that with both feet planted firmly on love, you'll be able to take in with all followers of Jesus the extravagant dimensions of Christ's love. Reach out and experience the breadth! Test its length! Plumb the depths! Rise to the heights! Live full lives, full in the fullness of God.

20-21 God can do anything, you know—far more than you could ever imagine or guess or request in your wildest dreams! He does it not by pushing us around but by working within us, his Spirit deeply and gently within us.

Glory to God in the church!

Glory to God in the Messiah, in Jesus!

Glory down all the generations!

Glory through all millennia! Oh, yes!

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. God cannot force us to believe in Him, nor can He force us to follow Him. This is something we even saw in the life and ministry of Jesus. He demonstrated Himself as Christ, and represented fully who God the Father was, yet people still chose not to believe Him—even when witnessing all His miracles. People had hardened hearts to Him—and it wasn't God doing the hardening. It wasn't even God who hardened Pharaoh's heart—it is the miracles and Righteousness of God that people react to in a hardened state. The disciples of Jesus "couldn't believe" some of the things Jesus did—their hearts were hardened.

[Mark 3:1-6](#) (MSG) [PoG]

Then he went back in the meeting place where he found a man with a crippled hand. The Pharisees had their eyes on Jesus to see if he would heal him, hoping to catch him in a Sabbath violation. He said to the man with the crippled hand, "Stand here where we can see you."

4 Then he spoke to the people: "What kind of action suits the Sabbath best? Doing good or doing evil? Helping people or leaving them helpless?" No one said a word.

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



5-6 He looked them in the eye, one after another, angry now, furious at their hard-nosed religion [hardness of their hearts]. He said to the man, “Hold out your hand.” He held it out—it was as good as new! The Pharisees got out as fast as they could, sputtering about how they would join forces with Herod’s followers and ruin him.

[Mark 16:9-16](#) (MSG) [PoG]

After rising from the dead, Jesus appeared early on Sunday morning to Mary Magdalene, whom he had delivered from seven demons. She went to his former companions, now weeping and carrying on, and told them. When they heard her report that she had seen him alive and well, they didn’t believe her.

12-13 Later he appeared, but in a different form, to two of them out walking in the countryside. They went back and told the rest, but they weren’t believed either.

14-16 Still later, as the Eleven were eating supper, he appeared and took them to task most severely for their stubborn unbelief [and hardness of heart], refusing to believe those who had seen him raised up. Then he said, “Go into the world. Go everywhere and announce the Message of God’s good news to one and all. Whoever believes and is baptized is saved; whoever refuses to believe is damned.

[Hebrews 3:7-11](#) (MSG) [PoG]

That’s why the Holy Spirit says,

Today, please listen;
don’t turn a deaf ear [harden your heart] as in “the bitter uprising,”
that time of wilderness testing!
Even though they watched me at work for forty years,
your ancestors refused to let me do it my way;
over and over they tried my patience.
And I was provoked, oh, so provoked!
I said, “They’ll never keep their minds on God;
they refuse to walk down my road.”
Exasperated, I vowed,
“They’ll never get where they’re going,
never be able to sit down and rest.”

Question: Is it a choice to believe in Him?

Response:

- B. We are given instruction not to be led “astray”—a choice. Jesus warned people to watch out for the deception of the Pharisees who lead people away from the Lord—all the while the Lord wanting to have relationship with them. He can only instruct us, not force us: “Don’t let people do that to you” [i.e., our choice]. This shows how we have a choice to whom we follow and whom we believe. God can only lead us to Himself, not make people.

[Matthew 23:1-13](#) (MSG)

Now Jesus turned to address his disciples, along with the crowd that had gathered with them. “The religion scholars and Pharisees are competent teachers in God’s Law. You won’t go wrong in following their teachings on

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



Moses. But be careful about following them. They talk a good line, but they don't live it. They don't take it into their hearts and live it out in their behaviour. It's all spit-and-polish veneer.

4-7 "Instead of giving you God's Law as food and drink by which you can banquet on God, they package it in bundles of rules, loading you down like pack animals. They seem to take pleasure in watching you stagger under these loads, and wouldn't think of lifting a finger to help. Their lives are perpetual fashion shows, embroidered prayer shawls one day and flowery prayers the next. They love to sit at the head table at church dinners, basking in the most prominent positions, preening in the radiance of public flattery, receiving honorary degrees, and getting called 'Doctor' and 'Reverend.'

8-10 "Don't let people do that to you, put you on a pedestal like that. You all have a single Teacher, and you are all classmates. Don't set people up as experts over your life, letting them tell you what to do. Save that authority for God; let him tell you what to do. No one else should carry the title of 'Father'; you have only one Father, and he's in heaven. And don't let people manoeuvre you into taking charge of them. There is only one Life-Leader for you and them—Christ.

11-12 "Do you want to stand out? Then step down. Be a servant. If you puff yourself up, you'll get the wind knocked out of you. But if you're content to simply be yourself, your life will count for plenty.

13 "I've had it with you! You're hopeless, you religion scholars, you Pharisees! Frauds! Your lives are roadblocks to God's kingdom. You refuse to enter, and won't let anyone else in either.

Question: Is God the one keeping you out of God's Kingdom?

Response:

- C. The Lord is always doing His utmost to lead us to "greener pastures", providing for us and keeping us safe from harm. However, He also makes it clear that, as Christians, we will face persecution. Paul faced much harm from Alexander the coppersmith ([2 Timothy 4:14-15](#)); whom I believe was Paul's "thorn in the flesh" as a "messenger of Satan" ([2 Corinthians 12:7-9](#)). This is because God cannot violate a person's own free will to be the one doing the persecuting. He, as God in the Flesh, couldn't even keep Himself from persecution.

[Mark 10:29-31](#) (MSG)

Jesus said, "Mark my words, no one who sacrifices house, brothers, sisters, mother, father, children, land—whatever—because of me and the Message will lose out. They'll get it all back, but multiplied many times in homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children, and land—but also in troubles. And then the bonus of eternal life! This is once again the Great Reversal: Many who are first will end up last, and the last first."

Question: Have you ever done something hurtful (intentionally or by mistake) to someone?

Response:

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



D. What are other areas in life where the Lord instructs us to do—not Him being the one doing:

[Matthew 18:18](#) (PoG) – Don't Limit Heaven on Earth.

I am truly telling you: that whatever *you choose* to bind [forbid] on earth, it will be also be bound in Heaven [forbidden *from coming to earth*]; and whatever *you choose* to loose on [set free into this] earth, it will be loosed [set free] in Heaven [*to be able to come to earth*].

[Mark 11:22-24](#) (MSG) – Speak to your Mountain.

Jesus was matter-of-fact: “Embrace this God-life. Really embrace it, and nothing will be too much for you. This mountain, for instance: Just say, ‘Go jump in the lake’—no shuffling or hemming and hawing—and it’s as good as done. That’s why I urge you to pray for absolutely everything, ranging from small to large. Include everything as you embrace this God-life, and you’ll get God’s everything.

[John 20:30-31](#) (MSG) – You Must Chose to Believe in Him.

Jesus provided far more God-revealing signs than are written down in this book. These are written down so you will believe that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God, and in the act of believing, have real and eternal life in the way he personally revealed it.

[Romans 12:1-2](#) (MSG) – You Need to Renew Your Mind.

So here’s what I want you to do, God helping you: Take your everyday, ordinary life—your sleeping, eating, going-to-work, and walking-around life—and place it before God as an offering. Embracing what God does for you is the best thing you can do for him. Don’t become so well-adjusted to your culture that you fit into it without even thinking. Instead, fix your attention on God. You’ll be changed from the inside out. Readily recognize what he wants from you, and quickly respond to it. Unlike the culture around you, always dragging you down to its level of immaturity, God brings the best out of you, develops well-formed maturity in you.

[James 4:7-10](#) (MSG) – We Have to Resist the Devil.

So let God work his will in you. Yell a loud no to the Devil and watch him make himself scarce. Say a quiet yes to God and he’ll be there in no time. Quit dabbling in sin. Purify your inner life. Quit playing the field. Hit bottom, and cry your eyes out. The fun and games are over. Get serious, really serious. Get down on your knees before the Master; it’s the only way you’ll get on your feet.

[1 John 4:1-3](#) (MSG) – We are Instructed to Test the Spirits.

My dear friends, don’t believe everything you hear. Carefully weigh and examine what people tell you. Not everyone who talks about God comes from God. There are a lot of lying preachers loose in the world.

2-3 Here’s how you test for the genuine Spirit of God. Everyone who confesses openly his faith in Jesus Christ—the Son of God, who came as an actual flesh-and-blood person—comes from God and belongs to God. And everyone who refuses to confess faith in Jesus has nothing in common with God. This is the spirit of antichrist that you heard was coming. Well, here it is, sooner than we thought!

Question: Do you find you would rather have God do for you, than do what He wants you to do?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. A sad reality to some Bible translations is that when done incorrectly, it can cause confusion and create unnecessary doctrines to try and resolve implied conflict in God's Word. In the following verses, most translations have contributed "hardness of heart" to something that God does to us (that He is the One hardening our heart); from which He then scolds us for having that hardened heart. But when we look at these verses in both the Greek and quoted Hebrew, it does not say that it is God doing the hardening. And the Message translation correctly shares this in John:

[John 12:35-40](#) (MSG)

35-36 Jesus said, "For a brief time still, the light is among you. Walk by the light you have so darkness doesn't destroy you. If you walk in darkness, you don't know where you're going. As you have the light, believe in the light. Then the light will be within you, and shining through your lives. You'll be children of light."

36-40 Jesus said all this, and then went into hiding. All these God-signs he had given them and they still didn't get it, still wouldn't trust him. This proved that the prophet Isaiah was right:

God, who believed what we preached?

Who recognized God's arm, outstretched and ready to act?

First, they wouldn't believe, then they couldn't—again, just as Isaiah said:

Their eyes are blinded, their hearts are hardened,

So that they wouldn't see with their eyes and perceive with their hearts,

And turn to me, God, so I could heal them.

This is how it would read in a corrected AKJV translation for both John and Isaiah:

[John 12:40](#) (PoG)

~~He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart;~~

Their eyes are blind, and their hearts are hardened.

And because of this, they are not able see, nor understand with their heart; to be converted.

So that I, the Lord, would indeed heal ([G2390](#)) them.

[Isaiah 6:10](#) (PoG)

~~Make the heart of this people fat,~~

~~and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes;~~

The hearts of these people are fat (waxed),

And their ears are heavy (dulled), and their eyes are shut (smeared shut / blinded);

Otherwise, they would see with their eyes, and hear with their ears,

and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed ([H7495](#)).

Thoughts: If it is the Lord's desire that they be converted and be healed, why is it that He would be the one hardening their hearts? Why would God's Will be keeping people away from Him when it is Will that all would come to Him?

We must not accept this contradiction—either we must believe He doesn't want people to come to Him, or that He does want people to come to Him. Jesus showed that it is God's Will that everyone would choose to come to Him for Salvation. Yet, Jesus also let us know that not all would. The Lord's wants everyone saved:

[2 Timothy 2:4-7](#) (MSG)

He wants not only us but everyone saved, you know, everyone to get to know the truth we've learned: that there's one God and only one, and one Priest-Mediator between God and us—Jesus, who offered himself in exchange for everyone held captive by sin, to set them all free. Eventually the news is going to get out. This and this only has been my appointed work: getting this news to those who have never heard of God, and explaining how it works by simple faith and plain truth.

- B. Let's tackle [Romans 9](#) including where it says, "Therefore He has mercy on whom He wills, and whom He wills He hardens". Does it really say God does violate our free will; and that it is Him who pre-chooses who gets Saved?

We won't read this chapter together, as it can be its own lesson. But want to bring some insight as to being able to read it from the perspective of God not controlling people.

We cannot discard all that we have now previously read through (and all the previous lessons) because of this one section of the Bible. We must instead evaluate what Paul is saying and the context from which he is saying it.

In general, the context of Romans 9 is written from a Jewish perspective towards Gentiles. For the Jews, they believed that because they were the "chosen" people, only they themselves had access to God. Yet God's plan was to always bring the Gentiles into that access—to "graft them in" ([Romans 11](#)).

This upset the Jews, because they didn't feel like the Gentiles "deserved" God's mercy. Just as Jonah lamented that God showed Nineveh mercy ([Jonah 4](#)). Or that the Disciples James and John wanted to "call fire down from Heaven" to destroy the Samaritan village ([Luke 9:54](#)). Our human nature tends to want to inflict a punishing justice for "evils". Yet Jesus did not come to Judge, but to bring Mercy and Forgiveness.

God doesn't pick based on our works—like humans do (or as we create Santa Claus to be)—He picks outside of our works because He Loves us and wants to give each of us a chance to come to Him and see how much Grace and Mercy He has for us. Esau was the "natural" choice in human eyes, but God chose outside of our way of doing things. It wasn't that He had anything against Esau, He just wanted to demonstrate compassion to Jacob.

David was an illegitimate son of Jesse (born from another woman than his brothers). This is how David looked nothing like his striking brothers. God chose the "red-headed step-child", disregarding the sin Jesse had committed. Our religious judgements would not let a bastard child be made king. Yet God did.

Jesus's lineage is through sinners we wouldn't want associated with our own "good name"; yet it was those sinners Jesus frequently hung out with. Those sins are not in issue with God (as we learned before).

What about Pharaoh then? We need to look at it from the perspective of God not being able to violate our free will (not the other way around). When we make this the truth, we can see that Pharaoh's heart (like the Pharisees and Disciples) were hardened already to the Lord—and that the miracles (plagues) revealed this hardness.

Hardened hearts tend to react negatively to the Lord's Righteousness.

For Pharaoh, the Lord knew he had a hardened heart, and furthermore, that it would remain hard. Thus, the Lord used what was available to demonstrate His existence and superiority over the god's of Egypt.

To delve into Romans 9 more, here are a couple of resources:

<http://lhim.org/blog/2014/04/11/a-free-will-perspective-on-romans-9-and-predestination/>

<https://graceandfaithministries.org/wp-content/uploads/2012/04/Romans-9.pdf>

- C. To study out further the notion of the "Sovereignty" of God and how He cannot violate our free will, please read:

<https://newcreations.org/sovereignty-of-god/>

THE LORD'S PRAYER

INTENTION:

Lord, "Teach us how to pray".

Let's not pray as in the Old Testament. But let's pray as confident God will hear us and answer us.

If we find our prayers are not answered, it's best to self-evaluate what you are praying; and if He has directed you to do something before that you have not finished doing.

But know, anytime you are in need, He is there to help. And prayer is just conversations with your Father.

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at what is typically titled: The Lord's Prayer.

These verses are something, that from a young age in Sunday School, I began to memorize. I am sure many of you are also familiar with it if you grew up in a church. But one thing I never really learned from that time, was the meaning of it. I could recite it, but it didn't mean much to me beyond something I was taught to do (as rote).

I was struck one day though when I read someone saying that this isn't really a prayer by the Lord—and as such, isn't really the Lord's prayer. Instead, it should be considered "The Disciple's Prayer". And this made sense to me.

Even though Jesus spoke it, it was given as a response to what the Disciples asked Him: "Master, teach us to pray, as John (the Baptist) taught his disciples". Jesus was giving them *their* prayer to say—not a prayer that Jesus was saying He prayed. Given too at a specific time in their Discipleship with Jesus. If we want to read what Jesus prayed, we need to read His prayers in [John 17](#). It is here that He prayed for Himself, His Disciples, and all Believers that were to exist.

So then, let's delve into some of the meaning and purpose behind this prayer for the Disciples. And then ask ourselves: can we apply it to our lives today? Yes and no.

In general, Jesus was teaching them a "new" way of relating to God. One that probably shook them to the core as to how they viewed or believed God—not as some distant figure, but a trusting and caring Father. Jesus took the religion out of prayer, making it a personal relationship; and one that didn't require a lot of "vain repetitions". However, some of what is said in the prayer has already been fulfilled. It's these aspects which we will dig into.

There are two accounts of this prayer for the Disciples—one in Matthew, the other in [Luke 11:1-4](#). They match almost word-for-word. But for our lesson here, we will focus on the Matthew account—breaking down each section afterwards in the related verses and questions section.

II. READING: "The Disciple's Prayer" (commonly referred to as "The Lord's Prayer"):

[Matthew 6:7-13](#) (NMB)

And when you pray, do not use vain repetitions like the heathen do. For they think that they will be heard for their many words. 8 Be not like them therefore. For your Father knows what you need before you ask of him. 9 Pray therefore in this manner:

O our Father who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

For thine is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever.

Amen.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. "Our Father who art in heaven". This opening line is one of the most dramatic changes in how the Disciple's would pray. When Jesus referred to God as His Father, it infuriated the Pharisees because they had never related to God that way (nor felt they had any right to). Yet Jesus broke that religious misconception and forever imparted that understanding of God as a Father to His Disciples and us. He is not distant and uncaring, He is responsible, protecting, caring, and in us as believers. We should never see ourselves as not being born of God and equal to Him (as Jesus demonstrated for us).

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



[John 5:15-18](#) (NMB) [PoG]

The man [*who had been healed by Jesus*] departed and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had made him whole. 16 And therefore the Jews persecuted Jesus, and sought means to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day.

17 And Jesus told them, My Father works until now, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought all the more to kill him, not only because he had broken the Sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, and made himself equal with God.

[1 Corinthians 8:5-6](#) (NMB)

And though there be what are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth (as there be gods many and lords many), 6 yet to us there is but one God, who is the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

Question: Do you see God as a Father? Do you see and relate to Him like you see and relate to your own dad?

Response:

- B. "Hallowed be thy name". Tied in with the notion of God as a Father, is that God is only a Good God. One who does not cause chaos, calamity, sickness/disease, natural disasters, and the like. The term "hallowed" ([G37](#)) here is representative of this characteristic of God that the disciples may not have understood. For them, reading what we call the "Old Testament", they would see a confusing God who gets blamed for much of the hardships faced in earth's history. Yet, Jesus demonstrated how untrue that was. And that God only wants to bring us Life. To be "hallowed" is to be separate from "profane things" (that is to treat someone with abuse); as meaning God is not the one bringing bad things upon people. But instead purifies and cleanses. He is Holy and Sanctified, just as He makes us Holy and Sanctified. And because He does this (not leading us to destruction), we can trust Him.

[Hebrews 2:10-18](#) (NMB)

For it was fitting for him, for whom all things are and by whom all things are, in accordance with the way that he brought many sons to glory, to make the Lord of their salvation perfect through suffering. 11 For he who sanctifies and those who are sanctified are all of one, for which sake he is not ashamed to call them brethren, 12 saying: I will declare your name to my brethren, and in the midst of the congregation I will praise you. 13 And again: I will put my trust in him. And again: Behold, here am I and the children that God has given me.

14 Considering then that the children were partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part with them, in order to put down through death him that had lordship over death – that is to say, the devil – 15 and to deliver those who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. 16 For in no place does he take on him the angels, but he takes the seed of Abraham on him. 17 Therefore it was fitting for him to be made like his brethren in all things, so that he could be merciful, and a faithful high priest in things concerning God, in order to purge the people's sins. 18 For in that he himself suffered and was tried, he is able to succour those who are tried.

Question: Do you trust God enough to consider Him worthy of being called "hallowed"?

Response:

- C. “Thy kingdom come”. It has come! And for us as believers, we have immediate access to this with the Holy Spirit. His Kingdom is not some distant thing to happen when Jesus comes again (of which we have to pray towards) but is something we can embrace now. Jesus spoke in His ministry about that Kingdom being in the midst of them, it is now gifted to us. It is in us. We can access it for our life when we need it. And if we are having difficulty seeing it in our lives, we can just ask the Lord to show what we have access to. For it has power in us!

[Luke 17:20-21](#) (NMB)

When he was asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God does not come with watching for it. 21 Neither may men say, See here, look there! For behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

[Romans 14:17](#) (NMB)

For the kingdom of God is not food and drink, but righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit.

[1 Corinthians 4:20](#) (NMB)

For the kingdom of God is not in words, but in power.

Question: Are you waiting for the Kingdom of God; or do you know you have it?

Response:

- D. “Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven”. The Lord works through us. So what we chose to limit on this earth, becomes a limit to what the Lord can do from Heaven. We are supposed to bring Heaven down to earth and do all He desires to be done—in the way He wants it done. Not forcing us out of anger or vengeance, but instructing out of Love and a true heart longing to provide us with the best life possible (an “Abundant Life”).

[Matthew 18:18](#) (PoG)

I am truly telling you: that whatever *you choose* to bind [forbid] on earth, it will be also be bound in Heaven [forbidden *from coming to earth*]; and whatever *you choose* to loose on [set free into this] earth, it will be loosed [set free] in Heaven [*to be able to come to earth*].

[Ephesians 3:20](#) (NMB)

Now to him who is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think by the power that works in us.

[Philippians 2:13](#) (NMB)

For it is God who works in you both the will and also the deed, of his own good will.

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



Question: Do you feel you limit God in your life and towards those around you?

Response:

- E. "Give us this day our daily bread". This is both a physical and Spiritual need. Jesus is the Word of Life that is our Daily Bread (Spiritually). We are also told not to worry about life, because the Lord knows how to provide for us in the everyday. He is continuously providing for us, even if we aren't even asking directly for it. Think of all the stress we put upon ourselves for the things the Lord wants to freely provide for us.

[Matthew 6:31-33](#) (NMB)

Therefore do not be anxious, saying, What will we eat? or, What will we drink? or, How will we be clothed? 32 After all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things. 33 But rather seek ye first the kingdom of heaven and its righteousness, and all these things will be ministered unto you.

[John 6:32-35](#) (NMB)

Jesus said to them, Truly truly I say to you, Moses did not give you bread from heaven, but my Father gives you the true bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is he who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.

34 Then they said to him, Lord, give us this bread forevermore.

35 And Jesus said to them, I am that bread of life. He who comes to me shall not hunger, and he who believes on me shall never thirst.

Question: What are areas of your life that you can "let go and let God"?

Response:

- F. "And forgive us our trespasses". As we have looked at before, Christ took all our sins of the flesh at the Cross. The sin of not believing in Him is removed when we do choose to believe in Jesus Christ. We don't need to ask for his forgiveness to cleanse away our sins; but we can ask to help clear any guilt we may have in our hearts.

[Hebrews 10:10](#) (NMB)

In accordance with this God's will, we are sanctified by the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once and for all.

[James 5:13-16](#) (NMB) [PoG]

If any of you be vexed with sorrows, let him pray. If any of you be merry, let him sing psalms. 14 If any be diseased among you, let him call for the elders of the congregation, and let them pray over him, and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord will raise him up; and if he has committed sins, [they are] forgiven him.

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



16 Confess your faults to one another. And pray for one another, that you may be healed: The fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

Question: Does something change in you when you confess the mistakes you make to others (or the Lord)?

Response:

- G. "as we forgive them that trespass against us". The "as" ([G2532](#)) translates to "indeed". That since the Lord has forgiven us, we indeed forgive others. This may be hard to do, but the Lord also helps provide the means necessary for us to be able to forgive others. When we hold onto unforgiveness, our hearts can become hardened and bitter—we don't let God deal with our own pain by taking responsibility for us and the other person. The Lord has forgiven both their sins committed against you, and your sins committed against others. And when we forgive, we can gain a peace in our hearts and minds. Note: this does not mean God won't forgive us if we chose not to forgive others—He cannot unforgive a sin that has already been forgiven at the Cross.

[Colossians 3:12-15](#) (NMB)

Now therefore, as chosen by God, holy and beloved, put on tender mercy, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, and longsuffering, 13 forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if anyone has a quarrel against another. Just as Christ forgave you, so also should you do.

14 Above all these things, put on love, which is the bond of perfectness. 15 And may the peace of God rule in your hearts, to which peace you are called in one body. And see that you be thankful.

Question: Do you hold unforgiveness against someone else—even if they have already died?

Response:

- H. "And lead us not into temptation". They believed God was the one who would create the temptations. Whether in our own personal lives, or when reading the "Old Testament", it can almost seem like God leads people into hardship and trouble to "try" them. But as the Lord said, it was Israel that "tried" Him ([Hebrews 3:7-11](#)). Even when we encounter persecution in our walk with the Lord, know it is not the Lord that brought the persecution—but that others persecute you for following the Lord.

[James 1:13-17](#) (NMB)

Let no one say when he is tempted, that he is tempted by God. For God tempts not to evil, nor does he tempt anyone, 14 but every person is tempted, drawn away, and enticed by his own fleshly nature and evil desire. 15 Then when desire has conceived, she brings forth sin, and sin when it is full-grown brings forth death.

16 Do not be mistaken, my dear brethren. 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of light, with whom is no variableness nor turning to darkness.

Question: Do you sometimes distance yourself from God in persecution/hardship because you blame Him for it?

Response:

- I. “but deliver us from evil”. In a continuation of the pervious section of verse, we can think God is the one trying us to then fail at the trial and sin. In essence, thinking that He is delivering us INTO sin. This change is that He is leading us out and away from sin. We can see that He will always provide a way out when temptation comes our way. We too have authority over Satan and the devil. And even moreso, God has made available a deliverance from evil that is both Satan [“evil one”] and the evil spoken of as not believing on Jesus Christ for Salvation—for when we do believe in Jesus Christ to Salvation, we are no longer deemed evil.

[John 17:13-19](#) (NMB)

Now I come to you. And I speak these words in the world so that they may have my joy full in them. 14 I have given them your words. And the world has hated them, because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. 15 I ask not that you take them out of the world, but that you keep them from evil. 16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world. 17 Sanctify them with your truth. Your word is truth. 18 As you sent me into the world, so have I sent them into the world. 19 And for their sakes I sanctify myself, so that they also may be sanctified through the truth.

[1 Corinthians 10:13](#) (NMB)

No trial has taken you but such as follows the nature of man. But God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tried above your strength, but will in the midst of the trial make a way to escape out.

[Galatians 1:3-4](#) (NMB)

Grace be with you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, 4 who gave himself for our sins to deliver us from this present evil world according to the will of God our Father.

Question: How can we recognise we are facing evil—and then use our authority or seek the Lord for help?

Response:

- J. “For thine is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.” This places God above all else. He is “the Kingdom”, “the Power”, “the Glory”, and “the Forever”. Through Jesus and all Creation, He has demonstrated that His authority is the greatest of all. That there is none higher than Him. He bows to no one. His rule is far greater than Satan’s, having stripped him of any power or authority. And we must not confuse God’s Kingdom with Satan’s kingdom—nor can they intermix. And all this power and authority lives in us!

[Colossians 1:9-17](#) (NMB)

For this reason we also, since the day we heard of it, have not ceased praying for you, and asking that you be fulfilled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding, 10 so that you may walk worthy of the Lord in all things that please him, being fruitful in all good works and increasing in the knowledge of God,

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



11 strengthened with all might through his glorious power to have all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness, 12 and giving thanks to the Father, who has made us fit to be partakers of the inheritance of saints in light. 13 He has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son, 14 in whom we have redemption through his blood; that is to say, the forgiveness of sins.

15 He is the image of the invisible God, and the first begotten of all creatures. 16 For by him were all things created: things that are in heaven and things that are in earth, things visible and things invisible, whether they be majesty, or lordship, or rule, or power. All things are created by him and in him, 17 and he is before all things, and in him all things have their being.

Question: How can we use all that the Lord has given us, being that He is alive and living inside of us?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. From that time the Disciples asked Jesus how they should pray, they learned of their Identity in Christ. Their prayer life went from one of questioning, to one of utmost BOLDNESS. This is how the Disciples prayed after they understood what they had been given from Christ Jesus: a powerful, confident prayer of authority!

[Acts 4:23-30](#) (NMB)

As soon as they were let go, they went to their companions and told them all that the high priests and elders had said to them. 24 And when they heard that, they lifted up their voices to God with one accord and said, Lord, you are God who has made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that is in them, 25 who by the mouth of your servant David has said: Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? 26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers came together against the Lord and against his Christ. 27 For of a truth, against your holy child Jesus, whom you have anointed, both Herod and also Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, gathered themselves together, 28 to do whatever your hand and your counsel determined before to be done. 29 And now, Lord, look upon their threatenings, and grant to your servants to speak your word with all confidence, 30 and stretch forth your hand so that healing and signs and wonders may be done by the name of the holy child Jesus.

31 And as soon as they had prayed, the place moved where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spoke the word of God boldly.

Thoughts: For me, this "Lord's Prayer" was asking something from God that I never really felt I could obtain. My belief was that I could ask, but that I was never good enough to actually receive it from Him—how could He give me what I ask for if I have never met His high expectations of me. I was always beggarly towards Him.

I did not realize until late in my life, that what I was trying to pray for had already been given me. The defeated Christian I was, I didn't have to live anymore. I could accept that He infused into me His Spirit and His entire Kingdom for me to have free access to. Not because I could meet my expectations of what I thought He wanted from me, but because He wanted to give it all to me, outside of my own self-judgement and debilitating critiques of self-righteous expectation. He gives to me because I deserve it for just being His child! You do too!

As a Christian, we should pray with an assurance of what we already have: [Ephesians](#). Yet, no matter how you feel and how much "faith" or "belief" you think you have or don't have, you can come to Him AS YOU ARE—for He does not judge you nor condemn you—He only will lift you up and out of where you are.

BAPTISMS

INTENTION:

Continually immerse yourself in who He correctly is; and in His Righteousness.

We need not worry about ritualistic washing, but to know that we can have a “clear conscience” before the Lord.

BAPTISMS

Bible Study: Lesson 026



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Baptisms.

I use the plural word here because we want to look at more than just water baptism, but other types as well.

Often, for people believing in Christ, the church leads them to be water baptized. Yet, there is more than one type of baptism discussed in the New Testament. There are three related Greek words assigned to the word Baptize.

- [G907: baptizō](#) – to dip repeatedly, to immerse, to submerge (of vessels sunk).
- [G908: baptisma](#) – immersion, submersion.
- [G909: baptisimos](#) – a washing, purification effected by means of water.

You can read the full definitions online, but in general, [G907](#) and [G908](#) represent the nature of the baptism being one of “immersion, submersion, and repeated dipping”. This plays a role in not only how we see water baptism, but also the baptism of the Holy Spirit and Fire (by Jesus), and baptism into the body of Jesus Christ (by the Holy Spirit).

We are immediately baptised by the Holy Spirit into the Body of Christ when we choose to believe in Christ Jesus. After that, we can proceed by choice for the other baptisms (in no particular order). And sometimes more than one baptism can happen (manifest) at the same time.

Firstly, we will read following in Mark about the requirement of salvation being that a person “believes and is baptized”. This baptism though is not about a water baptism, but of a person being baptised into the Body of Christ.

II. READING: [Mark 16:1-18](#) (GWT)

When the day of rest—a holy day, was over, Mary from Magdala, Mary (the mother of James), and Salome bought spices to go and anoint Jesus.

2 On Sunday they were going to the tomb very early when the sun had just come up. 3 They said to one another, “Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance to the tomb?” 4 When they looked up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away. It was a very large stone. 5 As they went into the tomb, they saw a young man. He was dressed in a white robe and sat on the right side. They were panic-stricken.

6 The young man said to them, “Don’t panic! You’re looking for Jesus from Nazareth, who was crucified. He has been brought back to life. He’s not here. Look at the place where they laid him. 7 Go and tell his disciples and Peter that he’s going ahead of them to Galilee. There they will see him, just as he told them.”

8 They went out of the tomb and ran away. Shock and trembling had overwhelmed them. They didn’t say a thing to anyone, because they were afraid.

9 After Jesus came back to life early on Sunday, he appeared first to Mary from Magdala, from whom he had forced out seven demons. 10 She went and told his friends, who were grieving and crying. 11 They didn’t believe her when they heard that he was alive and that she had seen him.

12 Later Jesus appeared to two disciples as they were walking to their home in the country. He did not look as he usually did. 13 They went back and told the others, who did not believe them either. 14 Still later Jesus appeared to the eleven apostles while they were eating. He put them to shame for their unbelief and because they were too stubborn to believe those who had seen him alive.

15 Then Jesus said to them, “So wherever you go in the world, tell everyone the Good News. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized ([G907](#)) will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.

17 “These are the miraculous signs that will accompany believers: They will use the power and authority of my name to force demons out of people. They will speak new languages. 18 They will pick up snakes, and if they drink any deadly poison, it will not hurt them. They will place their hands on the sick and cure them.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. John’s Baptism. This was a water-baptism of repentance (that is a change of mindset). Its purpose was to help change the mindset of people to help open up their hearts into accepting Christ Jesus. In a way, allowing them to let go of their sin-hindrances (or religious-hindrances) of the heart that would pose an obstacle to believing in Jesus Christ. To rethink how they viewed sin and its perceived impact on a relationship with God—for we were only “enemies in our mind” ([Colossians 1:21](#)) *thinking* that sin impacts our relationship with God. Jesus even demonstrated to the people how sin was a non-issue; often freeing their hearts/minds up to experience healing.

[Mark 1:4-5](#) (GWT)

John the Baptizer was in the desert telling people about a baptism ([G908](#)) of repentance for the forgiveness of sins. 5 All Judea and all the people of Jerusalem went to him. As they confessed their sins, he baptized ([G907](#)) them in the Jordan River.

[Acts 19:1-7](#) (GWT)

While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul travelled through the interior provinces to get to the city of Ephesus. He met some disciples in Ephesus 2 and asked them, “Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became believers?”

They answered him, “No, we’ve never even heard of the Holy Spirit.”

3 Paul asked them, “What kind of baptism ([G907](#)) did you have?” They answered, “John’s baptism ([G908](#)).”

4 Paul said, “John’s baptism ([G907](#)) was a baptism ([G908](#)) of repentance. John told people to believe in Jesus, who was coming later.”

5 After they heard this, they were baptized ([G907](#)) in the name of the Lord Jesus. 6 When Paul placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came to them, and they began to talk in other languages and to speak what God had revealed. 7 About twelve men were in the group.

Question: Does a change of mindset help us come to Christ (whether a believer or non-believer)?

Response:

- B. Jesus’s Baptism. Have you ever asked yourself why Jesus was Baptised? Jesus went to John the Baptist who was doing a water baptism of repentance. So, what did Jesus repent of if He didn’t have any sin?

We can look at this process being an internal and external demonstration of His commitment to fulfilling the Will of the Father. Jesus had the same choice we have—to accept the Father and His Will, or to follow our own flesh.

Christ's baptism of repentance was not of turning from "sin" (which He had none of) but turning from a life of His own (self) to live the life that He was called by God the Father to do. And He did it by His own Faith (not yet filled with the Holy Spirit). It was not something He saw or committed to by seeing in the flesh, but through the “Old Testament” Scripture as His witness to do so. For Jesus found Himself to be Christ through the Scripture.

Jesus studied the same scripture we have to find His Identity in the Father—and confirmation that He was the Christ. He found Himself as being human... “in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient to the point of death, even the death of the cross” ([Philippians 2:8](#))—“for even Christ pleased not himself” ([Romans 15:3](#)). And it took Jesus his whole life leading up to that point to prepare Himself for what was to come—but that choice was fully His to make. His flesh resisting God’s Will in the garden ([Luke 22:42-44](#)).

His baptism by John cemented this obedience in Jesus, giving up His own body's want to do as its flesh desired (survival, and not taking the sins of the world upon Himself). This moment also established the start of His ministry with the demonstration of the Holy Spirit that was poured upon Him (as a dove)—His water baptism coming with it the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. Both of which were demonstrations of what we ourselves receive when Jesus baptises us in this same Holy Spirit. We get the same in-filling as He does!

[John 1:14;29-34](#) (GWT)

The Word became human and lived among us. We saw his glory. It was the glory that the Father shares with his only Son, a glory full of kindness and truth.

29 John saw Jesus coming toward him the next day and said, "Look! This is the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world. 30 He is the one I spoke about when I said, 'A man who comes after me was before me because he existed before I did.' 31 I didn't know who he was. However, I came to baptize (G907) with water to show him to the people of Israel."

32 John said, "I saw the Spirit come down as a dove from heaven and stay on him. 33 I didn't know who he was. But God, who sent me to baptize (G907) with water, had told me, 'When you see the Spirit come down and stay on someone, you'll know that person is the one who baptizes (G907) with the Holy Spirit.' 34 I have seen this and have declared that this is the Son of God."

Question: Do you see the human side of Jesus?

Response:

- C. Holy Spirit Baptises us into Jesus Christ when we believe. In the Mark 16:15 baptism we read about above, what transpires is that when a person believes in Christ Jesus, they are immediately taken by the Holy Spirit and Baptised into Christ Jesus. Born Again by being in and of Christ Jesus, no longer as from Adam or our ancestors. This is the first and foremost baptism to take place for a believer as a believer—the "one baptism" that truly matters for salvation. You need not participate in any other baptism to be saved; just like the thief on the cross wasn't water baptised, yet was saved ([Luke 23:39-43](#)). When we see in Acts how 3,000 people came to believe and were baptised, it wasn't that they all went down to the river to be water baptised, it was that they were instantly baptised into the Body of Christ by the Holy Spirit.

[Acts 2:38-40](#) (GWT)

Peter answered them, "All of you must turn to God and change the way you think and act, and each of you must be baptized (G907) in the name of Jesus Christ so that your sins will be forgiven. Then you will receive the Holy Spirit as a gift. 39 This promise belongs to you and to your children and to everyone who is far away. It belongs to everyone who worships the Lord our God."

40 Peter said much more to warn them. He urged, "Save yourselves from this corrupt generation." 41 Those who accepted what Peter said were baptized (G907). That day about 3,000 people were added to the group.

[1 Corinthians 12:13](#) (GWT) [PoG]

By one Spirit [the Holy Spirit] we were all baptized (G907) into one body [the Body of Christ]. Whether we are Jewish or Greek, slave or free, God gave all of us one Spirit to drink.

[Ephesians 4:1-6](#) (GWT)

1, a prisoner in the Lord, encourage you to live the kind of life which proves that God has called you. 2 Be humble and gentle in every way. Be patient with each other and lovingly accept each other. 3 Through the peace that ties you together, do your best to maintain the unity that the Spirit gives. 4 There is one body and one Spirit. In the same way you were called to share one hope. 5 There is one Lord, one faith, one baptism (G908), 6 one God and Father of all, who is over everything, through everything, and in everything.

Question: As a believer, you are baptised (into Christ Jesus)! Do you fear that because you maybe haven't been water baptised (after believing in Jesus) that you aren't completely saved?

Response:

- D. Jesus baptises us with the Holy Spirit. The reason Jesus never baptised anyone in His ministry on earth was that if He had, the Holy Spirit would have come upon them. He instead had to wait until after the Cross. And we can see the impact that being baptised with the Holy Spirit (filled with the Holy Spirit) has on a believer. We gain a power only the Lord can provide. You can genuinely ask the Lord for this without hesitation or doubt.

This is something I have seen happen in my own life when I asked and received the Baptism of the Holy Spirit on 28 May 2014. From then, so much changed—from the way I saw scripture, to speaking in Tongues, to seeing Gifts of the Holy Spirit flow, to no longer being a defeated Christian. Experiencing this has so impacted my life and my desire for everyone else to experience it too! *We will expand on this more in the next Bible Lesson.*

[Matthew 3:11](#) (GWT)

I baptize (G907) you with water so that you will change the way you think and act. But the one who comes after me is more powerful than I. I am not worthy to remove his sandals. He will baptize (G907) you with the Holy Spirit and fire.

[Acts 1:4-8](#) (GWT)

Once, while he was meeting with them, he ordered them not to leave Jerusalem but to wait there for what the Father had promised. Jesus said to them, "I've told you what the Father promises: 5 John baptized (G907) with water, but in a few days you will be baptized (G907) with the Holy Spirit."

6 So when the apostles came together, they asked him, "Lord, is this the time when you're going to restore the kingdom to Israel?"

7 Jesus told them, "You don't need to know about times or periods that the Father has determined by his own authority. 8 But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes to you. Then you will be my witnesses to testify about me in Jerusalem, throughout Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

[Acts 2:1-4](#) (GWT)

When Pentecost, the fiftieth day after Passover, came, all the believers were together in one place. 2 Suddenly, a sound like a violently blowing wind came from the sky and filled the whole house where they were staying. 3 Tongues that looked like fire appeared to them. The tongues arranged themselves so that one came to rest on each believer. 4 All the believers were filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other languages as the Spirit gave them the ability to speak.

[Acts 9:17-19a](#) (GWT)

Ananias left and entered Judas’ house. After he placed his hands on Saul, Ananias said, “Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who appeared to you on your way to Damascus, sent me to you. He wants you to see again and to be filled with the Holy Spirit.”

18 Immediately, something like fish scales fell from Saul’s eyes, and he could see again. Then Saul stood up and was baptized ([G907](#)). 19 After he had something to eat, his strength came back to him.

Question: Would you like to receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit, with the experiences of Tongues?

Response:

- E. Jesus baptises us with fire. Fire represents a means of destruction that has permanence—just as the end of this current world will be destroyed by fire ([2 Peter 3:7](#)). It is this Fire that destroys the iniquities in our bodies. All that which is not of His Kingdom in our bodies is burnt up as a living sacrifice. Being made clean also by the washing of regeneration that is His Word, being Jesus Christ Himself ([John 15:3](#) and [Titus 3:5](#)).

Christ is our foundation, and when we build on that foundation our own works, doctrines, fleshly ways, or the Law (all that is “wood, hay, and stubble”), we defile that foundation. In turn, we thus defile ourselves as His Temple. But Christ will always keep us continually clean, burning up with fire all our iniquities; never destroying His Temple which is us, but keeping it Holy and clean! And because of this, we can look forward to living a life now without fear and with the expectation of being cleansed continually.

[Luke 3:16](#) (GWT)

John replied to all of them, “I baptize ([G907](#)) you with water. But the one who is more powerful than I is coming. I am not worthy to untie his sandal straps. He will baptize ([G907](#)) you with the Holy Spirit and fire.”

[1 Corinthians 3:12-17](#) (GWT) [PoG]

People may build on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, or straw. 13 The day will make what each one does clearly visible because fire will reveal it. That fire will determine what kind of work each person has done. 14 If what a person has built survives, he will receive a reward. 15 If his work is burned up, he will suffer the loss. However, he will be saved, though it will be like going through a fire.

16 Don’t you know that you are God’s temple and that God’s Spirit lives in you? 17 If anyone destroys God’s temple, God will destroy [this *defilement*] because God’s temple is holy. You are that holy temple!

Question: Do you sometimes feel the fire (conflict/anxiety) burning inside you when you pile on things in your life that aren’t of the Lord?

Response:

BAPTISMS

Bible Study: Lesson 026



F. Water baptism by another believer. This water baptism represents, not the removal of filth or sin, but a demand by God for you to have a good-conscience towards Him—a conscience not focused on what you do wrong (sin), but of what Christ did right (your perpetual righteousness from Christ Jesus). We are freed from sin. In essence, we must stop focusing on our sins (and “confessing” them) and start proclaiming our right-standing with God!

There is no need for us to confess sins for forgiveness, all those sins of the flesh were delt with at the Cross. Thus, when we are water baptised, it is not about confessing sins, but accepting that we have been Born-Again as new—our old self dead and gone. We can now live as having been sacrificed once and for all ([Romans 12:1](#)).

[Acts 8:35-39](#) (GWT) [PoG]

Then Philip spoke [to the Eunuch]. Starting with that passage, Philip told the official the Good News about Jesus. 36 As they were going along the road, they came to some water. The official [Eunuch] said to Philip, “Look, there’s some water. What can keep me from being baptized (G907)?” [37 Then Philip said, “If you believe with all your heart, you may.” And he answered and said, “I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.”] 38 The official [Eunuch] ordered the carriage to stop. He and Philip stepped into the water, and Philip baptized (G907) him. 39 When they had stepped out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord suddenly took Philip away. The official [Eunuch] joyfully continued on his way and didn’t see Philip again.

[Romans 6:3-7](#) (GWT)

Don’t you know that all of us who were baptized (G907) into Christ Jesus were baptized (G907) into his death? 4 When we were baptized (G908) into his death, we were placed into the tomb with him. As Christ was brought back from death to life by the glorious power of the Father, so we, too, should live a new kind of life. 5 If we’ve become united with him in a death like his, certainly we will also be united with him when we come back to life as he did. 6 We know that the person we used to be was crucified with him to put an end to sin in our bodies. Because of this we are no longer slaves to sin. 7 The person who has died has been freed from sin.

[1 Peter 3:18-21](#) (GWT) [PoG]

This is true because Christ suffered for our sins once. He was an innocent person, but he suffered for guilty people so that he could bring you to God. His body was put to death, but he was brought to life through his spirit. 19 In it he also went to proclaim his victory to the spirits kept in prison. 20 They are like those who disobeyed long ago in the days of Noah when God waited patiently while Noah built the ship. In this ship a few people—eight in all—were saved by water. 21 Baptism (G908), which is like that water, now saves you. Baptism doesn’t save by removing dirt from the body. Rather, baptism is a [demand for a good conscience toward God] through Jesus Christ, who came back from death to life.

Question: If you have been water baptised, what did it mean to you at the time?

Response:

G. Ritual baptising (washing) – [G909](#). Though this form of cleanliness of washing has its own merits, it is not a requirement of the Law which imposed it. Dirty hands, dishes, or things does not make a person unclean. Jesus stated it is not what goes into a person that makes them unclean, but what comes out ([Mark 7:15](#)). And what Christ did gives us a clear conscience—something ritual gifts, sacrifices, and ceremonial washing could never do.

[Hebrews 9:6-12](#) (GWT) [PoG]

That is how these two parts of the tent were set up. The priests always went into the first part of the tent to perform their duties. 7 But only the chief priest went into the second part of the tent. Once a year he entered and brought blood that he offered for himself and for the things that the people did wrong unintentionally. 8 The Holy Spirit used this to show that the way into the most holy place was not open while the tent was still in use.

9 The first part of the tent is an example for the present time. The gifts and sacrifices that were brought there could not give the worshiper a clear conscience. 10 These gifts and sacrifices were meant to be food, drink, and items used in various purification [washing ([G909](#))] ceremonies. These ceremonies were required for the body until God would establish a new way of doing things.

11 But Christ came as a chief priest of the good things that are now here. Christ went through a better, more perfect tent that was not made by human hands and that is not part of this created world. 12 He used his own blood, not the blood of goats and bulls, for the sacrifice. He went into the most holy place and offered this sacrifice once and for all to free us forever.

Question: Do you have a clear conscience towards God?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Matthew 28:18-20](#) (GWT)

When Jesus came near, he spoke to them. He said, “All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. 19 So wherever you go, make disciples of all nations: Baptize ([G907](#)) them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. 20 Teach them to do everything I have commanded you.

“And remember that I am always with you until the end of time.”

Thoughts: To be Baptised in the Name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit is not saying that when we water baptise a person that we must repeat this phrase “in the Name of the Father, and of Son, and of the Holy Spirit”. This use of the term baptise is in reference to a person being constantly immersed in the correct understanding of who the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are. A continuous (repeated dipping) teaching of the who the Lord is in a correct way.

“Grace and peace be multiplied to you in the correct knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord” ([2 Peter 1:2](#)).

This multiplication of Grace and Peace is indicative of a person experiencing a correct knowledge of who the Lord is. If what you hear brings guilt, condemnation, rules, disappointment, or the like, then what you have heard is not of the Lord.

Being baptised in water doesn’t make disciples. However, this immersing (baptising) of a person repeatedly in this correct knowledge is the key to discipleship, “teaching them to do everything I have commanded you”. All of which includes Love, signs, and wonders, and more—everything Jesus did, we do!

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

INTENTION:

This is the greatest thing in my life and walk with the Lord: to be Baptised and Filled in the Holy Spirit.

No longer was I a cowardly Christian pushed around by just any doctrine—He showed me Himself and with that came the Dynamite Power and Authority He desires so much for us to have and continually walk in.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at being Filled with the Holy Spirit (also referred to as the Baptism of the Holy Spirit).

This is something that truly transformed my life—but didn't know and experience this until late in my Christian life.

After being Born-Again at the age of 16 and being water baptised, I thought that was it—and from then, lived my life trying to be the best religious Christian I could be. And then, of course, failing miserably at that religion.

At around the age of 30, I met a group of young people who were showing a form of fellowship and Godly Love that I had not seen in any church I had been to. And one of these people ministered to me about this "Baptism of the Holy Spirit" that I was not quite familiar with—but because my heart was still hardened to trusting the Lord, I used my best Bible-studied religion to reject it and call out that person as misinterpreting scripture and the Holy Spirit.

It was not him misinterpreting scripture and the Holy Spirit, it was me. I wasn't ready, but seeds were watered.

Of interest was that, when I was 18 years old (a couple years after being Born-Again), I had a chance to personally experience someone speaking in tongues. I was still "new and fresh" in being born-Again and didn't think twice about it happening. My religion hadn't gotten in the way yet. Some early seeds.

But those seeds came to life in me around 38 years old when I started to hear and soften my heart to an un-religious Christianity. My belief changed over the course of a few years of hearing this message; the testimonies of dozens of people sharing their personal experiences in the Holy Spirit, Tongues, healings, gifts, and miracles; and personally, witnessing this infilling of the Holy Spirit with speaking in Tongues. And on the 28th of May 2014, I asked the Lord for this thing called the "Baptism of the Holy Spirit" with the ability (utmost want) to speak in Tongues.

That evening, by myself, in my flat, I put on some sermons on the topic, broke through my flesh's resistance (and the devil's dissuasion), and openly asked the Lord for it. In an instance, I felt inside of me something like a balloon filling, swelling into every part of my being—as though my body would pop (burst) from this inner pressure. I literally didn't burst, but what "popped" out was an outpouring of Tongues. So many different variations. Dialogs that were legitimate, but other-worldly. Languages that sounded foreign, but of this world. Fast, slow; stern, soft; gentle, strong (with a righteous indignation).

My flesh did not know what to think. It wanted to reject this as not being "real" languages or dialog. The devil wanted to convince me that it was of him, not of God. But I kept on!

As I lay on the floor face-down (having started the process walking around), I could physically sense Jesus Himself next to me—"seeing" Him standing there with sandals on and the hem of His white robe. So real was it, that I reached my arm out expecting to touch his feet and ankle with my hand. He confirmed for me that it truly was Him that "Baptises with the Holy Ghost and Fire" ([Luke 3:16](#)).

My experience (which will be different for all people) was an experience that ministered directly to who I was at the time, to confirm in my heart and mind that what had transpired was real and was of the Lord. That what I had felt and now possessed was God's Holy Spirit that filled me up to the point of "exploding" out in Tongues.

From that time, I pray, speak, think, and sing in Tongues—anywhere and everywhere. For myself, for others, for my personal relationship with the Lord and His Angels.

And from that moment, my Christian reality changed—confidence grew, scripture rewrote itself out of a religious book into Christ-words as my "eyes" were opened. There was a power in me that flowed out of me, that wasn't a "me" I had ever known. My Born-Again Holy Spirit was now infused and infilled with God's own Holy Spirit. My vessel was used to be filled up with Him, and as this water was scooped out, it became His wine ([John 2:1-11](#))!

As we look at the scriptures about being "Filled with the Holy Spirit", we will see the simplicity that is involved in receiving it. But first, we will see how important it is as we look at the impact it had on the Disciples (looking at them before receiving Him—with and without Jesus—and after receiving Him).

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



During Jesus's ministry with the "12" and "70", He gave them His authority over sickness/disease and demons. They could perform the same miracles as Jesus did. They did this without the infilling of the Holy Spirit.

But when Jesus "left" them by dying on the Cross and getting buried, they went from celebrating their authority, to fearfully retreating into hiding.

Yet, that all changed when the Holy Spirit came. Jesus "breathed the Holy Spirit" on the 11 disciples ([John 20:21-22](#)) and told them to wait for the Holy Spirit to come to everyone before going out. Having been given the Holy Spirit by Jesus, the now power-filled 11 Disciples boldly and bravely addressed the crowd gathered when the Holy Spirit came at Pentecost. The same power was given to the other disciples gathered, and what we too can gain when "filled up".

II. **READING:** The changes in the Disciples (with Jesus, without Jesus, and with the Holy Spirit):

[Luke 9:1-6; 10:1-2,17-19](#) (VOICE)

1 Jesus convened a gathering of the twelve. He gave them power and authority to free people from all demonic spirits and to heal them of diseases. 2 He sent them out to preach the kingdom of God and to heal the sick. 3-5 These were His instructions:

- a. Travel light on your journey: don't take a staff, backpack, bread, money, or even an extra change of clothes.
- b. When you enter a house, stay there until you leave that city.
- c. If a town rejects you, shake the dust from your feet as you leave as a witness against them.

6 The disciples left on their journeys from village to village. They preached the good news, and they healed the sick everywhere they went.

1 The Lord then recruited and deployed 70 more disciples. He sent them ahead, in teams of two, to visit all the towns and settlements between them and Jerusalem. 2 This is what He ordered.

Jesus: There's a great harvest waiting in the fields, but there aren't many good workers to harvest it. Pray that the Harvest Master will send out good workers to the fields.

17 When the 70 completed their mission and returned to report on their experiences, they were elated.

Seventy: It's amazing, Lord! When we use Your name, the demons do what we say!

Jesus: 18 I know. I saw Satan falling from above like a lightning bolt. 19 I've given you true authority. You can smash vipers and scorpions under your feet. You can walk all over the power of the enemy. You can't be harmed.

[Mark 16:9-14](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

9 After He rose from the dead early on Sunday, Jesus appeared first to Mary Magdalene, a woman out of whom He had cast seven demons. 10 She brought this news back to all those who had followed Him and were still mourning and weeping, 11 but they refused to believe she had seen Jesus alive.

12 After that, Jesus appeared in a different form to two of them as they walked through the countryside, 13 and again the others did not believe it.

14 The eleven did not believe until Jesus appeared to them all as they sat at dinner. He rebuked them for their hard hearts—for their [unbelief]—because they had failed to believe those witnesses who had seen Him after He had risen.

[Acts 2:1-4;37-41](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

When the holy day of Pentecost came 50 days after Passover, they were gathered together in one place.

2 Picture yourself among the disciples: A sound roars from the sky without warning, the roar of a violent wind, and the whole house where you are gathered reverberates with the sound. 3 Then a flame appears, dividing into smaller

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



flames and spreading from one person to the next. 4 All the people present are filled with the Holy Spirit and begin speaking in languages they've never spoken, as the Spirit empowers them.

37 When the people heard this, their hearts were pierced; and they said to Peter and his fellow apostles,

Pilgrims: Our brothers, what should we do?

Peter: 38 Reconsider your lives; change your direction. [Be baptised] in the name of Jesus God's Anointed, the Liberating King. Then your sins will be forgiven, and the gift of the Holy Spirit will be yours. 39 For the promise of the Spirit is for you, for your children, for all people—even those considered outsiders and outcasts—the Lord our God invites everyone to come to Him.

40 Peter was pleading and offering many logical reasons to believe. 41 Whoever made a place for his message in their hearts received the baptism; in fact, that day alone, about 3,000 people joined the disciples.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Here are the many demonstrations in Acts of believers receiving and/or being "filled" with the Holy Spirit. Often, it was a natural process to believing. Other times it was a separate occurrence from first believing in Jesus Christ. In this way, we can experience it for ourselves and others in the same way—upon a person believing in Jesus Christ (being Born-Again), or as a separate experience anytime after a person believes in Jesus Christ (is Born-again). So, this Baptism of the Holy Spirit (infilling of the Holy Spirit) can be simultaneous or separate from Water Baptism and/or Baptism into Jesus Christ (believing in Him). Can be done by hearing or laying on of hands by believers. Many times, the confirmation of this infilling was people speaking in Tongues.

[Acts 2:4](#) (VOICE)

All the people present are filled with the Holy Spirit and begin speaking in languages they've never spoken, as the Spirit empowers them.

[Acts 4:8-10](#) (VOICE)

Peter (filled with the Spirit): 8 Rulers and elders of the people, 9 yesterday a good deed was done. Someone who was sick was healed. If you're asking us how this happened, 10 I want all of you and all of the people of Israel to know this man standing in front of you—obviously in good health—was healed by the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Anointed One. This is the same Jesus whom you crucified and whom God raised from the dead.

[Acts 8:14-17](#) (VOICE)

Meanwhile word had reached the Lord's emissaries in Jerusalem that the message of God was welcomed in Samaria—a land of half-breeds and heretics in the minds of many Judeans. They sent Peter and John 15 to pray for the Samaritans. They were especially eager to see if the new believers would receive the Holy Spirit 16 because until this point they had been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus but had not experienced the Holy Spirit. 17 When Peter and John laid hands on the people, the Holy Spirit did indeed come upon them all.

[Acts 9:17-19](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

So Ananias went and entered the house where Saul was staying. He laid his hands on Saul and called to him.

Ananias: Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who appeared to you on your way here, sent me so you can regain your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit.

18 At that instant, something like scales fell from Saul's eyes, and he could see. So he got up, [was baptised], 19 ate some food (remember, he had not eaten for three days), and regained his strength. He spent a lot of time with the disciples in Damascus over the next several days.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



[Acts 10:44-48a](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Peter wasn't planning to stop at this point, but the Holy Spirit suddenly interrupted and came upon all the people who were listening. 45-46 They began speaking in foreign languages (just as the Jewish disciples did on the Day of Pentecost), and their hearts overflowed in joyful praises to God. Peter's friends from Joppa—all of them Jewish, all circumcised—were stunned to see that the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out even on outsiders.

Peter: 47 Can anyone give any good reason not to [baptise them]? After all, it's obvious they have received the Holy Spirit just as we did on the Day of Pentecost.

48 So he had them baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

[Acts 13:9](#) (VOICE)

Saul, who is also known as Paul, was suddenly full of the Holy Spirit. He stared directly into Elymas's face.

[Acts 13:52](#) (VOICE)

The disciples weren't intimidated at all; rather, they were full of joy and the Holy Spirit.

[Acts 19:1-6](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

1 While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul's overland journey brought him back to Ephesus. He encountered a group of about a dozen disciples there.

Paul: 2 Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became believers?

John's Disciples: We've never heard about the Holy Spirit.

Paul: 3 Well then, what kind of [baptism] did you receive?

John's Disciples: We received the [baptism] that John taught.

Paul: 4 John taught the truth—that people should be baptized with renewed thinking and turn toward God. But he also taught that the people should believe in the One whose way he was preparing, that is, Jesus the Anointed.

5 As soon as they heard this, they were baptized, this time in the name of our Lord Jesus. 6 When Paul laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came upon them in the same way the original disciples experienced at Pentecost: they spoke in tongues and prophesied.

Question: If you have not received the Baptism of the Holy Spirit or aren't sure if you have been "Filled with the Holy Spirit", would you like to—even speaking in Tongues?

Response:

- B. "Re-Filled". Here we read about already-filled Disciples being filled again. We don't assume they somehow lost their in-filling, but we can see there is nothing wrong with being "filled" again (or as many times as you need).

[Acts 4:29-31](#) (VOICE)

And now, Lord, take note of their intimidations intended to silence us. Grant us, Your servants, the courageous confidence we need to go ahead and proclaim Your message 30 while You reach out Your hand to heal people, enabling us to perform signs and wonders through the name of Your holy servant Jesus.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



31 They finished their prayer, and immediately the whole place where they had gathered began to shake. All the disciples were filled with the Holy Spirit, and they began speaking God’s message with courageous confidence.

Question: Anyone want a “Re-Filling” of the Holy Spirit?

Response:

- C. For a believer, we don’t need to be filled with the Holy Spirit for our walk with the Lord, but why would we not want it. If there was no benefit to it, the Lord would not have offered it—even Jesus needed the infilling of the Holy Spirit before He could begin His ministry. For the disciples, they first had Jesus to rely on for support and the Holy Spirit was “with them”; but Jesus left them and replaced Himself with an even “better” personal support for us: the Holy Spirit “in them”.

[John 14:16-18](#) (VOICE)

I will ask the Father to send you another Helper, the Spirit of truth, who will remain constantly with you. 17 The world does not recognize the Spirit of truth, because it does not know the Spirit and is unable to receive Him. But you do know the Spirit because He lives with you, and He will dwell in you. 18 I will never abandon you like orphans; I will return to be with you.

[John 16:7](#) (VOICE)

But the truth is that My departure will be a gift that will serve you well, because if I don’t leave, the great Helper will not come to your aid. When I leave, I will send Him to you.

[Romans 8:26-29](#) (VOICE)

A similar thing happens when we pray. We are weak and do not know how to pray, so the Spirit steps in and articulates prayers for us with groaning too profound for words. 27 Don’t you know that He who pursues and explores the human heart intimately knows the Spirit’s mind because He pleads to God for His saints to align their lives with the will of God? 28 We are confident that God is able to orchestrate everything to work toward something good and beautiful when we love Him and accept His invitation to live according to His plan.

Question: Do you feel that having Jesus with you would be better than having the Holy Spirit with/in you?

Response:

- D. I have found that having the infilling (Baptism) of the Holy Spirit has helped me in my everyday walk with the Lord. It is His purpose-given ability to walk in a Godly authority. Some benefits of having the infilling of the Holy Spirit is that He makes living His life easier—a huge power-boost to our own Holy Spirit inside of us. This power-boost is translated as “dynamite power” ([G1411](#) – *dynamis*). Your own Spirit made Holy (Holy Spirit) is infused with dynamic power that gives you a greater abundance than you would have on your own. The same infused power that Jesus used.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



[Luke 4:14](#) (VOICE)

Jesus returned to Galilee in the power ([G1411](#)) of the Holy Spirit, and soon people across the region had heard news of Him.

[Acts 1:8](#) (VOICE)

Here's the knowledge you need: you will receive power ([G1411](#)) when the Holy Spirit comes on you. And you will be My witnesses, first here in Jerusalem, then beyond to Judea and Samaria, and finally to the farthest places on earth.

[Romans 15:13](#) (VOICE)

I pray that God, the source of all hope, will infuse your lives with an abundance of joy and peace in the midst of your faith so that your hope will overflow through the power ([G1411](#)) of the Holy Spirit.

[Ephesians 3:16](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Father, out of Your honourable and glorious riches, strengthen Your people. Fill their [inner man] with the power ([G1411](#)) of [His Spirit].

Question: How would a "dynamite" boost of His Power help you in your everyday walk with Him?

Response:

- E. Here are some of the extra dynamite-power-benefits that He helps us with. It's not that without the infilling, you don't have these gifts and abilities; it is just that He helps you overflow more abundantly with them!

[1 Corinthians 12:1,4-11](#) (VOICE)

Now let me turn to some issues about spiritual gifts, brothers and sisters. There's much you need to learn.

4 Now there are many kinds of grace gifts, but they are all from the same Spirit. 5 There are many different ways to serve, but they're all directed by the same Lord. 6 There are many amazing working gifts in the church, but it is the same God who energizes them all in all who have the gifts.

7 Each believer has received a gift that manifests the Spirit's power and presence. That gift is given for the good of the whole community. 8 The Spirit gives one person a word of wisdom, but to the next person the same Spirit gives a word of knowledge. 9 Another will receive the gift of faith by the same Spirit, and still another gifts of healing—all from the one Spirit. 10 One person is enabled by the Spirit to perform miracles, another to prophesy, while another is enabled to distinguish those prophetic spirits. The next one speaks in various kinds of unknown languages, while another is able to interpret those languages. 11 One Spirit works all these things in each of them individually as He sees fit.

[Galatians 5:16-18;22-26](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Here's my instruction: walk in the Spirit, and let the Spirit bring order to your life. If you do, you will never give in to your selfish and sinful cravings. 17 For everything the flesh desires goes against the Spirit, and everything the Spirit desires goes against the flesh. There is a constant battle raging between them that prevents you from doing the good you want to do. 18 But when you are led by the Spirit, you are no longer subject to the law.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



22 The Holy Spirit produces a different kind of fruit: unconditional love, joy, peace, patience, kindheartedness, goodness, [faith], 23 gentleness, and self-control. You won't find any law opposed to fruit like this. 24 Those of us who belong to the Anointed One have crucified our old lives and put to death the flesh and all the lusts and desires that plague us.

25 Now since we have chosen to walk with the Spirit, let's keep each step in perfect sync with God's Spirit. 26 This will happen when we set aside our self-interests and work together to create true community instead of a culture consumed by provocation, pride, and envy.

[Ephesians 5:8b-21](#) (VOICE)

...let God fill you with the Holy Spirit. 19 When you are filled with the Spirit, you are empowered to speak to each other in the soulful words of pious songs, hymns, and spiritual songs; to sing and make music with your hearts attuned to God; 20 and to give thanks to God the Father every day through the name of our Lord Jesus the Anointed for all He has done. 21 And the Spirit makes it possible to submit humbly to one another out of respect for the Anointed.

Question: Would you like to have a boost in living as Christ and a boost to all His Gifts—to just “be Him” (the Identity you have been made having been Born-Again)?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. This is one thing I want to make clear about the Baptism (infilling) of the Holy Spirit: that this is not a requirement to speak in tongues, perform miracles, healings, and all the Gifts. To do those which Jesus says we can do, all we have to do is believe. The same happened with the Disciples—they did all the same healing and casting-out demons that Jesus did before they themselves had the infilling of the Holy Spirit.

[Mark 16:17-18](#) (VOICE)

And these signs will follow those who believe: they will be able to cast out demons in My name, speak with new tongues, 18 take up serpents, drink poison without being harmed, and lay their hands on the sick to heal them.

Thoughts: There truly is a reason Jesus sent the Holy Spirit down for us to be able to be infilled (overflowing) with Him. Take ahold of that free power for us. And do not fear it or that you could do something to lose that infilling—for He so gladly wants you to have it. His countenance is so happy for you to have it.

Nothing you can do or have done or are doing can keep the Holy Spirit from infilling a believer. You are already made Holy when you believed in Christ Jesus, so no ritual cleansing or forgiveness-asking or sacrifice will make the Holy Spirit come into you. No sin will keep Him from coming into you. He comes into you because you are a Born-Again child of the Living God and Father, not because you don't have sin. You deserve it because you are His child. How awesome is that!

THE HUMANITY OF JESUS

INTENTION:

I think it's easier to view Christ Jesus as God, than it is to see Him as Human.

But right now, a human sits in the Throne Room next to God the Father on Humanity's behalf.

And as a human, He knows exactly what you are facing in your life in this world—He is more than empathetic, He lived it and experience it, and showed us how to overcome it!

THE HUMANITY OF JESUS

Bible Study: Lesson 028



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at The Humanity of Jesus.

Too often we can view Jesus the Christ as God (and only God). Yet, He came as a human being in likeness of us to accomplish the Father's Will. He lived on this earth as a human, experiencing everything that each and every one of us humans experience.

Not only did He face the same challenges we face, but experienced personally any sin we may have committed or had happen to us—He bore every single sin a person can commit on the Cross. As such, He knows the hurt it can cause, the struggle to bear the weight of it, the impact it has on a person, the shame, guilt, condemnation, and temptation; yet with the knowing of how to overcome it in you and against you.

Yes, He had an advantage when He was born, not being born through Adam's sin as we are; but we must know that when we are Born-Again by believing in Him, we become exactly as He is ([1 John 5:17b](#)).

So, let us relate to Him in both fashions... both as a human and, as a believer, Holy and overcoming! He is our sibling (our Brother) and we share the same kind of Loving Father that Loved Him. God Loves us in the same exact way He loved Jesus as a human. This is why God sent Him, to destroy the hindrance of sin that deceives us into thinking we cannot have an intimate relationship with Him.

We will look at the humanity of Jesus and how He relates to us in some everyday situations. But first we will read about how He actually is a human in Hebrews (see also [Romans 5](#) and [1 Corinthians 15](#)).

II. READING: [Hebrews 2:1-18](#) (TPT)

This is why it is so crucial that we be all the more engaged and attentive to the truths that we have heard so that we do not drift off course. 2 For if the message of the law spoken and confirmed by angels brought a just penalty to every disobedient violation; 3 then how would we expect to escape punishment if we despise the very truths that give us life? The Lord himself was the first to announce these things, and those who heard him first-hand confirmed their accuracy. 4 Then God added his witness to theirs. He validated their ministry with signs, astonishing wonders, all kinds of powerful miracles, and by the gifts of the Holy Spirit, which he distributed as he desired.

5 For God will not place the coming world, of which we speak, under the government of angels. 6 But the Scriptures affirm: What is man that you would even think about him, or care about Adam's race.

7 You made him lower than the angels for a little while. You placed your glory and honour upon his head as a crown. And you have given him dominion over the works of your hands, 8 For you have placed everything under his authority.

This means that God has left nothing outside the control of his Son, even if presently we have yet to see this accomplished. 9 But we see Jesus, who as a man, lived for a short time lower than the angels and has now been crowned with glorious honour because of what he suffered in his death. For it was by God's grace that he experienced death's bitterness on behalf of everyone!

10 For now he towers above all creation, for all things exist through him and for him. And that God made him, pioneer of our salvation, perfect through his sufferings, for this is how he brings many sons and daughters to share in his glory. 11 Jesus, the Holy One, makes us holy. And as sons and daughters, we now belong to his same Father, so he is not ashamed or embarrassed to introduce us as his brothers and sisters! 12 For he has said,

"I will reveal who you really are to my brothers and sisters, and I will glorify you with praises in the midst of the congregation."

13 And, "My confidence rests in God!"

And again he says, "Here I am, one with the children Yahweh has given me."

14 Since all his “children” have flesh and blood, so Jesus became human to fully identify with us. He did this, so that he could experience death and annihilate the effects of the intimidating accuser who holds against us the power of death. 15 By embracing death Jesus sets free those who live their entire lives in bondage to the tormenting dread of death. 16 For it is clear that he didn’t do this for the angels, but for all the sons and daughters of Abraham. 17 This is why he had to be a man and take hold of our humanity in every way. He made us his brothers and sisters and became our merciful and faithful King-Priest before God; as the One who removed our sins to make us one with him. 18 He suffered and endured every test and temptation, so that he can help us every time we pass through the ordeals of life.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. Jesus faced His flesh, just as we do (putting it to death to Live in Spirit). He had to resist starvation and the Cross:

[Matthew 4:1-2](#) (TPT)

Afterward, the Holy Spirit led Jesus into the wilderness to experience the ordeal of testing by the accuser. 2 And after fasting for forty days, Jesus was extremely hungry.

[Mark 14:32-36](#) (TPT)

Then Jesus led his disciples to an orchard called “The Oil Press.” He told them, “Sit here while I pray awhile.” 33 He took Peter, Jacob, and John with him. An intense feeling of great horror plunged his soul into deep sorrow. 34 And he said to them, “My heart is overwhelmed with anguish and crushed with grief. It feels as though I’m dying. Stay here and keep watch with me.”

35 He walked a short distance away, and being overcome with grief, he threw himself facedown on the ground. He prayed that if it were possible, he would not have to experience this hour of suffering. 36 He prayed, “Abba, my Father, all things are possible for you. Please—remove this cup of suffering! Yet what I want is not important, for I only desire to fulfill your plan for me.”

[Hebrews 12:3-4](#) (TPT)

So consider carefully how Jesus faced such intense opposition from sinners who opposed their own souls, so that you won’t become worn down and cave in under life’s pressures. 4 After all, you have not yet reached the point of sweating blood in your opposition to sin.

Question: We all face our own flesh; what parts of the flesh are you asking the Lord to expose that you may overcome and change that part of your humanity?

Response:

B. He also faced temptations—all temptations appeal to the flesh. The first one Jesus faced from the Devil was to stop His fasting (key to overcoming unbelief). The second was for Him to commit suicide (jumping off the tower). The third was for Him to inherit the kingdoms of the earth without needing to go through the anguish of the Cross and all of humanity’s sins (worshiping the Devil instead of God). And these all fall into the three categories. Additionally, we are told to “resist the devil and he will flee from you” ([James 4:7](#)); this Jesus demonstrated. But also that He will help provide a way out from temptation ([1 Corinthians 10:13](#)).

[Matthew 4:1-10](#) (TPT)

Afterward, the Holy Spirit led Jesus into the wilderness to experience the ordeal of testing[a] by the accuser. 2 And after fasting for forty days, Jesus was extremely hungry. 3 Then the tempter came to him and said, “How can you possibly be the Son of God and go hungry? Just command these stones to be turned into loaves of bread.”

4 He answered, “The Scriptures say: Bread alone will not satisfy, but true life is found in every word that constantly goes forth from God’s mouth.”

5 Then the accuser transported Jesus to the holy city of Jerusalem and perched him at the highest point of the temple 6 and said to him, “If you’re really God’s Son, jump, and the angels will catch you. For it is written in the Scriptures: He will command his angels to protect you and they will lift you up so that you won’t even bruise your foot on a rock.”

7 Once again Jesus said to him, “The Scriptures say: You must never put the Lord your God to a test.”

8 And the third time the accuser lifted Jesus up onto a very high mountain range and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and all the splendour that goes with it. 9 “All of these kingdoms I will give to you,” the accuser said, “if only you will kneel down before me and worship me.”

10 But Jesus said, “Go away, Satan! For the Scriptures say: Kneel before the Lord your God and worship only him.”

[1 John 2:15-18](#) (TPT)

Don’t set the affections of your heart on this world or in loving the things of the world. The love of the Father and the love of the world are incompatible. 16 For all that the world can offer us—the gratification of our flesh, the allurements of the things of the world, and the obsession with status and importance—none of these things come from the Father but from the world. 17 This world and its desires are in the process of passing away, but those who love to do the will of God live forever.

Question: What tempts your flesh?

Response:

- C. Jesus (and His family) had to rely on the Lord financially; just as He asks of us. As a baby, their family had to escape Herod by travelling to Egypt and other areas. The gold/gifts they received from the ‘Wise Men’ allowed for their passage, need, and survival. Then, as a ‘carpenter’ ([G5045](#): builder / ship builder / craftsman / planner / author) with his dad ([Mark 6:3](#)), one can argue that their business was blessed and quite successful. Then, as an adult, Jesus had enough funds to have a house in Capernaum ([Mark 2:1](#)). Then during His ministry, He had enough funds to take care of all His Disciples with places to stay, daily food to eat, boats to rent, clothes to wear, and even the large “Last Supper” banquet—all the while Judas was stealing money from Him (the Disciples Treasury). The Father took care of Him and all His needs, just as Jesus shared with us to seek His Kingdom first and all our living necessities will be added to us ([Matthew 6:25-34](#)).

[Matthew 2:11](#) (TPT)

When they came into the house and saw the young child with Mary, his mother, they fell to the ground at his feet and worshiped him. Then they opened their treasure chests full of gifts and presented him with gold, frankincense, and myrrh.

[Matthew 4:13-16](#) (TPT)

Jesus moved from Nazareth to make his home in Capernaum, which is by Lake Galilee in the land of Zebulun and Naphtali. 14 He did this to make the prophecy of Isaiah come true:

15 Listen, you who live in the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, along the road to the sea and on the other side of the Jordan, and Galilee—the land of the Gentiles!

16 You who spend your days shrouded in darkness can now say, “We have seen a brilliant Light.” And those who live in the dark shadow land of death can now say, “The Dawning Light arises on us.”

[John 12:4-6](#) (TPT)

But Judas the locksmith, Simon’s son, the betrayer, spoke up and said, 5 “What a waste! We could have sold this perfume for a fortune and given the money to the poor!”

6 (In fact, Judas had no heart for the poor. He only said this because he was a thief and in charge of the money case. He would steal money whenever he wanted from the funds given to support Jesus’ ministry.)

[Mark 14:12-16](#) (TPT) [PoG]

On the first day of Unleavened Bread, when the Passover Lamb is sacrificed, Jesus’ disciples asked him, “Where would you like us to prepare the Passover meal for you?”

13 So he sent two of his disciples ahead into Jerusalem with these instructions: “Make your way into the city and watch for a man carrying a pitcher of water. Follow him, 14 and say to the owner of whatever house he enters, ‘The Teacher wants to ask you: “Do you have my room [lodging place] ready where I can eat the Passover meal with my disciples?’” 15 And he will show you a large upstairs room ready and with a table set. Make preparations for us there.”

16 So they went into the city and found everything to be exactly like Jesus had prophesied, and they prepared for him the Passover meal.

Question: Do you feel the Lord can provide for your needs to fulfil His Will just as He did for Jesus?

Response:

- D. We should never deny that we experience emotions. They are given from the Lord as “made in Their Image”. As such, Jesus had the exact emotions we have. He loved, He cried, He got frustrated, and He got angry (Righteous Indignation). His soul (emotional realm) was tormented like ours gets. For Him and us, it’s not about having those emotions, it’s about what we feel like doing as a result of those emotions—do we let our flesh take over or the Holy Spirit in us. *I’d recommend that you take time to look for His emotions when you read the Bible.*

[Matthew 17:14-18](#) (TPT) – Frustration

They came to where a large crowd had gathered to wait for Jesus. A man came and knelt before him 15 and said, “Lord, please show your tender mercy toward my son. He has a demon who afflicts him. He has epilepsy, and he suffers horribly from seizures. He often falls into the cooking fire or into the river. 16 I brought him to your followers, but they weren’t able to heal him.”

17 Jesus replied, “Where is your faith? Can’t you see how wayward and wrong this generation is? How much longer do I stay with you and put up with your doubts? Bring your son to me.”

18 Then Jesus rebuked the demon and it came out of him and the boy was instantly healed!

[Mark 6:31-34;45-46](#) (TPT) – Compassion and Burnout

There was such a swirl of activity around Jesus, with so many people coming and going, that they were unable to even eat a meal. So Jesus said to his disciples, “Come, let’s take a break and find a secluded place where you can rest a while.” 32 They slipped away and left by sailboat for a deserted spot. 33 But many of the people saw them leaving and realized where they were headed, so they took off running along the shore. Then people from the surrounding towns joined them in the chase, and a large crowd got there ahead of them.

34 By the time Jesus came ashore, a massive crowd was waiting. At the sight of them, his heart was filled with compassion, because they seemed like wandering sheep who had no shepherd. So he taught them many wonderful things.

45 After everyone had their meal, Jesus instructed his disciples to get back into the boat and go on ahead of him and sail to the other side to Bethsaida. 46 So he dispersed the crowd, said good-bye to his disciples, then slipped away to pray on the mountain.

[John 12:27-28](#) (TPT) – Turmoil in His Soul

“Even though I am torn within, and my soul is in turmoil, I will not ask the Father to rescue me from this hour of trial. For I have come to fulfil my purpose—to offer myself to God. 28 So, Father, bring glory to your name!” Then suddenly a booming voice was heard from the sky, “I have glorified my name! And I will glorify it through you again!”

Question: Do you feel you relate to His emotions; and Him to your emotions?

Response:

- E. Jesus knows what pain of the body is too—and the sickness you face. He took the most horrible beating anyone could bear going to the Cross. And with that beating, “by His stripes we are healed” as he bore all our sickness and curses upon Himself. And on top of that, He took upon Himself every sin of humanity with their emotions.

[Romans 15:3](#) (TPT)

For not even the most powerful one of all, the Anointed One, lived to please himself. His life fulfilled the Scripture that says: All the insults of those who insulted you fall upon me.

[1 Peter 2:23-24](#) (TPT)

When he was verbally abused, he did not return with an insult; when he suffered, he would not threaten retaliation. Jesus faithfully entrusted himself into the hands of God, who judges righteously. 24 He himself carried our sins in his body on the cross so that we would be dead to sin and live for righteousness. Our instant healing flowed from his wounding.

Question: Do you believe that Jesus heals your body, mind, soul, heart, spirit, and your sins?

Response:

F. Jesus had to also learn like we do for hope, trust, humility, trials, persecution, and patience.

[Hebrews 5:1-10](#) (TPT)

For every High Priest was chosen from among the people and appointed to represent them before God by presenting their gifts to God and offering sacrifices on their behalf. 2 Since the High Priest is also one who is clothed in weakness, he humbles himself by showing compassion to those who are ignorant of God’s ways and stray from them. 3 And for this reason, he has to not only present the sin offerings of others, but also to bring a sin offering for himself. 4 And no one takes this honour upon himself by being self-appointed, but God is the one who calls each one, just as Aaron was called.

5 So also, Christ was not self-appointed and did not glorify himself by becoming a high priest, but God called and glorified him! For the Father said to him, “You are my favoured Son. Today I have fathered you.”

6 And in another Scripture he says about this new priestly order, “You are a Priest like Melchizedek, a King-Priest forever!”

7 During Christ’s days on earth he pleaded with God, praying with passion and with tearful agony that God would spare him from death. And because of his perfect devotion his prayer was answered and he was delivered. 8 But even though he was a wonderful Son, he learned to listen and obey through all his sufferings. 9 And after being proven perfect in this way he has now become the source of eternal salvation to all those who listen to him and obey. 10 For God has designated him as the King-Priest who is over the priestly order of Melchizedek.

Question: How can you learn to trust the Lord in every aspect of life—obeying even when faced with hardships?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. Even as a human being, we have access to the same Spirit He lived in. When we believe (as Jesus believed), we have: God in us, Christ in us, Holy Spirit in us. We can do all that He demonstrated and more ([John 14:12-14](#))! So even though He experiences humanity with us, we can experience Spirituality with Him.

[Ephesians 3:14-21](#) (TPT)

So I kneel humbly in awe before the Father of our Lord Jesus, the Messiah, 15 the perfect Father of every father and child in heaven and on the earth. 16 And I pray that he would unveil within you the unlimited riches of his glory and favour until supernatural strength floods your innermost being with his divine might and explosive power.

17 Then, by constantly using your faith, the life of Christ will be released deep inside you, and the resting place of his love will become the very source and root of your life.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

INTENTION:

We live in a world where there are many things out there to want to steal from us. Some, because they are jealous and want what you have. Others because of their own lack. And others because they don't want you to have it.

It is the "thief that comes to steal, kill, and destroy" anything the Lord has Life in for you. This thief does not want you to succeed in the Lord of what He has planned for you. But the thief may not be who you think it is.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at The Thief (Discernment & Battle).

When we look at the verse about it being “a thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy” ([John 10:10](#)), we can easily say that this is talking about Satan. It can be—but more specifically, it is not just him, but anything that opposes the Lord (or us with the Lord). Thief translates from the Greek ([G2812](#)) as: *an embezzler, pilferer*.

This is what we want to study out. What is the “thief” that is taking away from you a relationship with the Lord, or the doing of His Will as our own? How do we discern the “thief”? And what is our battle against the “thief”?

Since we know that Christ Jesus destroyed (disarmed) the power of Satan ([Luke 10:17-20](#) and [Colossians 2:15](#)), we can acknowledge that he is not the greatest enemy to the Lord—he never was a threat to God, only a threat to humanity. And Jesus, as a human, defeated Satan for us!

So, although Satan can still oppose us, we are also opposed by other things we may want to credit to Satan (or the Devil). But the Devil ([G1228](#)) is simply: *a calumniator (to utter maliciously false statements, charges, or imputations about; to injure the reputation of by ‘misrepresentation’), false accuser, slanderer*. So, anything that does those things against God or whom you are in Christ is what you must discern and battle. This includes:

- Our own flesh.
- Our unrenewed mind (strongholds).
- Our filtered (veiled) or hardened heart.
- The Law.
- Fear.
- Other spirits.
- False teachings/teachers.
- Unbelief.

For me, I have had to overcome each of these in my Christian life—from false beliefs to my own flesh. The flesh being the biggest obstacle against whom we are in Christ; for it is our own flesh (learned nurture/nature from this world) that is our worst enemy. Even for Jesus, it wasn’t Satan keeping Him from the Cross, but His own flesh.

It’s an opportunity to come to an understanding that just because it feels right, does not mean it’s from God. Test the spirits and what your flesh is trying to do: their motives, adversary, tradition, want, emotion, character, nature, habits, influence, pressure, etc). Look how often Jesus corrected His Disciples on what they thought was the right thing to do in the moment—like call down fire from heaven to punish a city, or keep Jesus from getting arrested and crucified. Even the Pharisees felt they were doing right by objecting to how Jesus ministered and healed people.

What you submit yourselves to (the flesh or the Lord), you become slaves to—so choose the Lord ([Romans 6:16](#)).

II. READING: [Romans 8:1-39](#) (CSB)

Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those in Christ Jesus, 2 because the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and death. 3 For what the law could not do since it was weakened by the flesh, God did. He condemned sin in the flesh by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh as a sin offering, 4 in order that the law’s requirement would be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit. 5 For those who live according to the flesh have their minds set on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit have their minds set on the things of the Spirit. 6 Now the mindset of the flesh is death, but the mindset of the Spirit is life and peace. 7 The mindset of the flesh is hostile to God because it does not submit to God’s law. Indeed, it is unable to do so. 8 Those who are in the flesh cannot please God. 9 You, however, are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God lives in you. If anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to him. 10 Now if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit gives life because of righteousness. 11 And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead lives in you, then he who raised Christ from the dead will also bring your mortal bodies to life through his Spirit who lives in you.

12 So then, brothers and sisters, we are not obligated to the flesh to live according to the flesh, 13 because if you live according to the flesh, you are going to die. But if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



14 For all those led by God's Spirit are God's sons. 15 For you did not receive a spirit of slavery to fall back into fear. Instead, you received the Spirit of adoption, by whom we cry out, "Abba, Father!" 16 The Spirit himself testifies together with our spirit that we are God's children, 17 and if children, also heirs—heirs of God and coheirs with Christ—if indeed we suffer with him so that we may also be glorified with him.

18 For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worth comparing with the glory that is going to be revealed to us. 19 For the creation eagerly waits with anticipation for God's sons to be revealed. 20 For the creation was subjected to futility—not willingly, but because of him who subjected it—in the hope 21 that the creation itself will also be set free from the bondage to decay into the glorious freedom of God's children. 22 For we know that the whole creation has been groaning together with labour pains until now. 23 Not only that, but we ourselves who have the Spirit as the firstfruits—we also groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for adoption, the redemption of our bodies. 24 Now in this hope we were saved, but hope that is seen is not hope, because who hopes for what he sees? 25 Now if we hope for what we do not see, we eagerly wait for it with patience.

26 In the same way the Spirit also helps us in our weakness, because we do not know what to pray for as we should, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with inexpressible groanings. 27 And he who searches our hearts knows the mind of the Spirit, because he intercedes for the saints according to the will of God.

28 We know that all things work together for the good of those who love God, who are called according to his purpose. 29 For those he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, so that he would be the firstborn among many brothers and sisters. 30 And those he predestined, he also called; and those he called, he also justified; and those he justified, he also glorified.

31 What, then, are we to say about these things? If God is for us, who is against us? 32 He did not even spare his own Son but gave him up for us all. How will he not also with him grant us everything? 33 Who can bring an accusation against God's elect? God is the one who justifies. 34 Who is the one who condemns? Christ Jesus is the one who died, but even more, has been raised; he also is at the right hand of God and intercedes for us. 35 Who can separate us from the love of Christ? Can affliction or distress or persecution or famine or nakedness or danger or sword? 36 As it is written:

Because of you we are being put to death all day long; we are counted as sheep to be slaughtered.

37 No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him who loved us. 38 For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor rulers, nor things present nor things to come, nor powers, 39 nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Our flesh is always at war with our Born-Again Spirit! And we can easily discern some of what is the flesh and what is the Spirit through the passage below. But sometimes we get deceived by the flesh in the things not listed—ways we grew up and learned about discrimination, prejudices, xenophobia, racism, gender inequality, or even our own personality types that go against the Spirit.

[Galatians 5:13-26](#) (CSB) [PoG]

For you were called to be free, brothers and sisters; only don't use this freedom as an opportunity for the flesh, but serve one another through love. 14 For the whole law is fulfilled in one statement: Love your neighbour as yourself. 15 But if you bite and devour one another, watch out, or you will be consumed by one another.

16 I say, then, walk by the Spirit and you will certainly not carry out the desire of the flesh. 17 For the flesh desires what is against the Spirit, and the Spirit desires what is against the flesh; these are opposed to each other, so that you don't do what you want. 18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



19 Now the works of the flesh are obvious: sexual immorality, moral impurity, promiscuity, 20 idolatry, sorcery, hatreds, strife, jealousy, outbursts of anger, selfish ambitions, dissensions, factions, 21 envy, drunkenness, carousing, and anything similar. I am warning you about these things—as I warned you before—that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, [faith], 23 gentleness, and self-control. The law is not against such things. 24 Now those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. 25 If we live by the Spirit, let us also keep in step with the Spirit. 26 Let us not become conceited, provoking one another, envying one another.

Question: Can the Lord help us expose our flesh and overcome it?

Response:

- B. Our minds are often trained by this world to focus on the negative (just watch much of the news). When we think in opposition to the Spirit, we can hinder the Will of the Lord through our lives as “vessels of the Holy Spirit”. Our mind can even deceive us into thinking that sins make us enemies to God ([Colossians 1:21-22](#))—it doesn’t. This is why it is so important to renew our minds to be moulded in the correct knowledge of the Lord, and allowing Him (through the Spirit) to be the “Stronger man” that overpowers your strongholds!

[Luke 11:21-22](#) (CSB) [PoG]

When a strong man, fully armed, guards his estate, his possessions are secure. 22 But when one stronger [*the Holy Spirit*] than he attacks and overpowers him, he takes from him all his weapons [*strongholds*] he trusted in [*his flesh*], and divides up his plunder [*strips away his weapons and valuables*].

[Romans 12:2](#) (CSB)

Do not be conformed to this age, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, so that you may discern what is the good, pleasing, and perfect will of God.

[2 Corinthians 10:3-6](#) (CSB) [PoG]

For although we live in the flesh, we do not wage war according to the flesh, 4 since the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh, but are powerful through God for the demolition of strongholds. We demolish arguments 5 and every proud thing that is raised up against the knowledge of God, and we [lead away] every thought captive to obey Christ. 6 And we are ready to punish any disobedience, once your obedience is complete.

[2 Peter 1:2](#) (CSB) [PoG]

May grace and peace be multiplied to you through the [correct] knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.

Question: What are some of the things the Lord has renewed in your mind and thinking?

Response:

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



- C. Our hardened hearts also disrupt our walk with the Lord. The hardened heart of an unbeliever does not let the Lord in; while the hardened heart of a believer does not let the Lord out from in them. We essentially block Heaven from coming down and manifesting in this world and a person ([Matthew 16:19](#)).

[2 Corinthians 3:14-16](#) (CSB)

but their minds were hardened. For to this day, at the reading of the old covenant, the same veil remains; it is not lifted, because it is set aside only in Christ. 15 Yet still today, whenever Moses is read, a veil lies over their hearts, 16 but whenever a person turns to the Lord, the veil is removed.

[Hebrews 3:12-15](#) (CSB)

Watch out, brothers and sisters, so that there won't be in any of you an evil, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. 13 But encourage each other daily, while it is still called today, so that none of you is hardened by sin's deception. 14 For we have become participants in Christ if we hold firmly until the end the reality that we had at the start. 15 As it is said: Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion.

Question: Have you ever hardened your heart to something the Lord is speaking to you about?

Response:

- D. The Law will always bring death, because it appeals to the flesh for the flesh to seek its own self-righteousness and reward. For us to submit to the Law, we are removing ourselves from the Grace of the Lord into self-works!

[1 Corinthians 15:56-57](#) (CSB)

The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ!

[2 Corinthians 3:6-9](#) (CSB)

He has made us competent to be ministers of a new covenant, not of the letter, but of the Spirit. For the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life. 7 Now if the ministry that brought death, chiselled in letters on stones, came with glory, so that the Israelites were not able to gaze steadily at Moses's face because of its glory, which was set aside, 8 how will the ministry of the Spirit not be more glorious? 9 For if the ministry that brought condemnation had glory, the ministry that brings righteousness overflows with even more glory.

[Galatians 3:10-14](#) (CSB)

For all who rely on the works of the law are under a curse, because it is written, Everyone who does not do everything written in the book of the law is cursed. 11 Now it is clear that no one is justified before God by the law, because the righteous will live by faith. 12 But the law is not based on faith; instead, the one who does these things will live by them. 13 Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, because it is written, Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree. 14 The purpose was that the blessing of Abraham would come to the Gentiles by Christ Jesus, so that we could receive the promised Spirit through faith.

Question: Have you ever tried to live up to the impossibility of the Law (even if just the 10 Commandments)?

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



Response:

- E. Fear opposes the Lord—for the Lord specifically says He does not give us a “spirit of fear” ([2 Timothy 1:7](#)). Since fear is not from Him, then it becomes a hindrance in our lives. Instead, His Spirit gives us Boldness!

[Philippians 1:12-14](#) (CSB)

Now I want you to know, brothers and sisters, that what has happened to me has actually advanced the gospel, 13 so that it has become known throughout the whole imperial guard, and to everyone else, that my imprisonment is because I am in Christ. 14 Most of the brothers have gained confidence in the Lord from my imprisonment and dare even more to speak the word fearlessly.

[1 John 4:18a](#) (CSB)

There is no fear in love; instead, perfect love drives out fear, because fear involves punishment.

Question: Has fear ever kept you from ministering to other people as directed by the Holy Spirit?

Response:

- F. “Test the spirits to see if they are from God” ([1 John 4:1](#)). There are differing spiritual forces at work in our lives. We have our own spirit we are born with, then Born-Again Spirit, Holy Spirit, the spirit of this world, and the spirit of our minds. All have something to say, but it is the Spirit of the Lord that we must discern and follow; knowing that the Spiritual realm of God is not the same as (nor in cooperation with) the spiritual realm of Satan.

[Matthew 12:25-28](#) (CSB)

Knowing their thoughts, he told them, “Every kingdom divided against itself is headed for destruction, and no city or house divided against itself will stand. 26 If Satan drives out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then will his kingdom stand? 27 And if I drive out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your sons drive them out? For this reason they will be your judges. 28 If I drive out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.

[Ephesians 2:1-2](#) (CSB)

And you were dead in your trespasses and sins 2 in which you previously walked according to the ways of this world, according to the ruler of the power of the air, the spirit now working in the disobedient.

[Ephesians 4:22-24](#) (CSB)

to take off your former way of life, the old self that is corrupted by deceitful desires, 23 to be renewed in the spirit of your minds, 24 and to put on the new self, the one created according to God’s likeness in righteousness and purity of the truth.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



[Ephesians 6:10-18](#) (CSB)

Finally, be strengthened by the Lord and by his vast strength. 11 Put on the full armour of God so that you can stand against the schemes of the devil. 12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the cosmic powers of this darkness, against evil, spiritual forces in the heavens. 13 For this reason take up the full armour of God, so that you may be able to resist in the evil day, and having prepared everything, to take your stand. 14 Stand, therefore, with truth like a belt around your waist, righteousness like armour on your chest, 15 and your feet sandaled with readiness for the gospel of peace. 16 In every situation take up the shield of faith with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit—which is the word of God. 18 Pray at all times in the Spirit with every prayer and request, and stay alert with all perseverance and intercession for all the saints.

Question: Have you ever pondered the different spiritual realms and the affects they can have on you?

Response:

- G. We are instructed to beware of false teachings (as of the Pharisees and Sadducees), or the mixing of the Law and Grace [Old Covenant / New Covenant ([Mark 2:22](#))]. Paul got quite upset with the Galatians and others for this.

[Mark 7:6-8;13](#) (CSB)

He answered them, “Isaiah prophesied correctly about you hypocrites, as it is written:

This people honours me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

7 They worship me in vain, teaching as doctrines human commands.

8 Abandoning the command of God, you hold on to human tradition.”

You nullify the word of God by your tradition that you have handed down. And you do many other similar things.”

[Galatians 1:6-9; 3:1-5](#) (CSB)

I am amazed that you are so quickly turning away from him who called you by the grace of Christ and are turning to a different gospel— 7 not that there is another gospel, but there are some who are troubling you and want to distort the gospel of Christ. 8 But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, a curse be on him! 9 As we have said before, I now say again: If anyone is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, a curse be on him!

You foolish Galatians! Who has cast a spell on you, before whose eyes Jesus Christ was publicly portrayed as crucified? 2 I only want to learn this from you: Did you receive the Spirit by the works of the law or by believing what you heard? 3 Are you so foolish? After beginning by the Spirit, are you now finishing by the flesh? 4 Did you experience so much for nothing—if in fact it was for nothing? 5 So then, does God give you the Spirit and work miracles among you by your doing the works of the law? Or is it by believing what you heard.

[Colossians 2:4-10](#) (CSB)

I am saying this so that no one will deceive you with arguments that sound reasonable. 5 For I may be absent in body, but I am with you in spirit, rejoicing to see how well ordered you are and the strength of your faith in Christ.

6 So then, just as you have received Christ Jesus as Lord, continue to walk in him, 7 being rooted and built up in him and established in the faith, just as you were taught, and overflowing with gratitude.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



8 Be careful that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deceit based on human tradition, based on the elements of the world, rather than Christ. 9 For the entire fullness of God’s nature dwells bodily in Christ, 10 and you have been filled by him, who is the head over every ruler and authority.

Question: Have you ever shared something about the Lord that turned out to be not from or of Him?

Response:

H. “Help me in my unbelief” ([Mark 9:14-29](#)). Unbelief is simply believing in something that is opposite of God. It’s not about how much you believe God, but the part of you that also believes contrary to a true belief in Him.

[Matthew 13:57-58](#) (CSB)

And they were offended by him. Jesus said to them, “A prophet is not without honour except in his hometown and in his household.” 58 And he did not do many miracles there because of their unbelief

[Mark 16:14-18](#) (CSB)

Later he appeared to the Eleven themselves as they were reclining at the table. He rebuked their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they did not believe those who saw him after he had risen. 15 Then he said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. 17 And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; 18 they will pick up snakes; if they should drink anything deadly, it will not harm them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will get well.”

Question: What have you come to believe about the Lord that you didn’t believe before (removing unbelief)?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Philippians 1:9-10](#) [PoG]

And this I pray, that your Agape Love may abundantly exceed, even more by far, in [correct] knowledge and all cognition [through thought, experience, and the senses]; that you may recognize as genuine (after examination / testing) the things that are different and of importance (to distinguish between good and evil); that you may be sincere and without offence (not stumbling or being caused to stumble, nor troubled by a consciousness of sin) till the day of Christ.

Thoughts: Recognize those things which are Good (of God) and those things which are Evil (not of God).

For me, I’m tired of God getting blamed for something He had nothing to do with! I am tired of religion and doctrines to make God out to be something He is not. I desire the Truth to be known about who Jesus Christ showed God to be: an Agape Loving Father to us all. Not only striving so for myself, but wanting for others too.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



This is my "Righteous Indignation"! And I have this because I was tricked and lied to so much in my 40+ years of life by Christians and Christianity. I was taught about a God who doesn't really exist as the "God" I have now learned about. These lies came through people in my life, in authority, family, churches, and horrible Bible translations. It is those evils that I want to bring into the Light so that others do not have to go down that same path of being the helpless Christian I was; which I had even preached unto others that false Christianity.

But Christianity, Jesus Christ, God the Father, and the Holy Ghost did not accomplish all they did for me to be helpless—a messed up life where I just waiting to die or the Lord to show up again. NO! He came to give me LIFE right now in this life. His authority. His Hope. His breakthrough. His Health. His confidence. I never knew that was even possible growing up. And it took the Truth to set me free.

Now is a time in my life that I can actually Rest in the Sabbath of His Work (what the Sabbath really means). Now is the time I am seeing Him as an Agape Loving Father. Now is the time I have His Faith in and through me. Now is a time I have no fear of Him. And now is a time where I know what is Him (Good) and what is not Him (evil), because I recognize the spirits at work in this world and in life. I can sit in His throne room without hindrance.

We are to test if something is good or evil; recognizing the difference between the Goodness of God the Father and that which is not of Him (evil). When we don't know the Truth of His Nature and Character (as defined by everything Jesus Christ did and showed), then we are deceived. Likewise, if we believe God controls everything, we allow ourselves to submit to "false prophets" who change the True Nature and Character of God the Father into their own doctrines—through manipulating scriptures out of context, to changing Bible translations to fit their doctrine, to even rewriting the Bible (taking away the very Love-Nature of God). This is the definition of what a false prophet is: one who denies that the Gospel is actually that which Paul preached and wrote about; the completeness of Christ's accomplishments for us...a Gospel of Power, not of words. When the Gospel just becomes words and placid comfort, without Power, it's no longer the Gospel. Test what the preacher, article, or translation says. Test what you are told! Test what I even write or say.

This "spirit of our mind" is our mental way of thinking (our thoughts and imaginations). When our thinking is wrong, it creates all kinds of false doctrines and forced false-beliefs in who God is. This is what I was trapped in.

To say that God is the one causing calamity or sickness / disease in a person's life is to not test the spirits. To say that God violates our free will to believe by pre-selecting some, and rejecting others, is not truly knowing Him! And to not believe in the Gifts and Miracle workings of the Holy Spirit now, is to reject your authority in Christ.

So this is what I am highly passionate about through these Lessons—to break through the lies, falsities, deception, and discouragement of false doctrines that can plague Christianity and Bible interpretations / translations. I want you to experience the freedom I am experiencing! Christ came to set us free for the sake of being free. This is what I strive for; this is what I long for. So I pray you can be free too!

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

INTENTION:

One of the most difficult things I have to do in life, is let go of trying and doing, and just submit to the Lord.

Many things in this world fight for your attention and submission. Who are you offering yourself to?

For, “the one to whom you offer yourself—he will take you and be your master, and you will be his slave.”

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Humility, Obedience, and Trust (in relation to the Lord).

The word 'obedience' for me used to be heavy-laden with guilt and shame—that if I wasn't obedient to God's Law, then I was apt to be punished. Just as I was when I didn't obey my mom or dad. But, as we have learned, that is not God's character and nature to punish us ([Romans 5:1](#)), but to bless us. And His desire is that we align with Him.

This kind of "obedience" is just choosing Him over choosing anything else: our God-Given free-will ability to choose Life or Death ([Deuteronomy 30:19-20](#)). We all have the free-will choice to believe in Him (Jesus Christ) or to not. We, even as believers, have a free-will choice to do as He does (just as Jesus fully demonstrated). Jesus was humbly obedient even unto death ([Philippians 2:8](#)).

That humility that is required to be obedient (which Jesus had) is summed up as: "humility is not thinking less of yourself, but of God more". When we make ourselves less than who God says we are, we are neglecting His Life for us. We humans are the valuable pearl and treasure He gave it all up for ([Matthew 13:44-46](#)). We must always embrace ourselves as who we really are as believers... "for as Jesus is, so are we in this world" ([1 John 4:17](#)).

Furthermore, we as believers have been given ALL Spiritual Blessings ([Ephesians 1:3](#)); let's not "humble" ourselves so lowly that we don't use what He already gave us. As soon as you believe and are Born-Again, you receive it all from Him. Our obedience to Him as believers does not entail more blessings—we don't "give to get"; He gave it all Himself and gifted it to us because He says we deserve it as just being His Children. The obedience here is that we were obedient to believe in Jesus Christ as our Saviour, and God as our Father.

Thus, as a believer, obedience isn't about "getting from God", but about alignment. He always desires to work in us, through us, and with us to manifest His Will on earth as it is in Heaven ([Matthew 6:10](#)). When we align with Him in obedience, what we gain is the lack of conflict in one's soul, overcoming the flesh. That Kingdom of God in our life manifests as Righteousness, Peace, and Joy in the Holy Spirit ([Romans 14:17](#)). And from that, His Blessings flow through and out of us as gifts to those who need it—giving out each and every Gift of the Holy Spirit.

God is also providing us with the ability to be obedient to Him (us acting in Faith)—**Faith literally is just the manifestation of God in your life**. Having that want of faith (that desire to do of God), but not have it manifest as an action (demonstrating God) is a "dead faith" ([James 2:17-20](#)). And when you do something that is not of faith, it is considered sin because it is not something from God ([Romans 14:23b](#)). This is because Faith is a Fruit of the Holy Spirit. Faith is not what we demonstrate toward God (doing for Him to "move"), it's actually what God is doing through you. God the Father manifested Himself through Jesus Christ, and it was credited to Jesus Christ as Faith ([Hebrews 12:1-2](#)). Jesus demonstrated this for us, gifting us the exact same ability to do so as well ([Romans 12:3](#)).

Don't fall into the "works" trap (even the "faith works" trap) that approaches God in an "if I do, He will"; thinking that His blessings (or healings/miracles) only come upon me if "I have faith", or if "I do good", or do "something" that God may want of me to do. This isn't obedience, this is works. We are free from having to work for our salvation or blessings. He wants us to be obedient because He just wants us to live the best life that has been set before us that is in Christ Jesus. How He lived is how we can live (doing God's Will even through persecution).

Jesus's human struggle toward obedience was to deny his human flesh. When he denied his human flesh, he maintained that obedience to God the Father. Through all the persecution that tested Him, it was testing Him to see if He would break and be obedient to His flesh rather than to God—as per His prayer in the Garden ([Luke 22:39-46](#)).

Humility involves change. Change involves growth. Growth involves action. Action involves obedience. Obedience involves submission. Submission involves humility (putting aside one's own wants at the cost of self—our old self).

Who (what) we submit ourselves to we become slaves to. Let us become "slaves" to righteousness! Let's use our free-will ability to choose an alignment with Him, not of sin, not the Law, nor our flesh.

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



II. **READING:** [Romans 6:1-23](#) (TLB)

Well then, shall we keep on sinning so that God can keep on showing us more and more kindness and forgiveness?

2-3 Of course not! Should we keep on sinning when we don't have to? For sin's power over us was broken when we became Christians and were baptized to become a part of Jesus Christ; through his death the power of your sinful nature was shattered. 4 Your old sin-loving nature was buried with him by baptism when he died; and when God the Father, with glorious power, brought him back to life again, you were given his wonderful new life to enjoy.

5 For you have become a part of him, and so you died with him, so to speak, when he died; and now you share his new life and shall rise as he did. 6 Your old evil desires were nailed to the cross with him; that part of you that loves to sin was crushed and fatally wounded, so that your sin-loving body is no longer under sin's control, no longer needs to be a slave to sin; 7 for when you are deadened to sin you are freed from all its allure and its power over you. 8 And since your old sin-loving nature "died" with Christ, we know that you will share his new life. 9 Christ rose from the dead and will never die again. Death no longer has any power over him. 10 He died once for all to end sin's power, but now he lives forever in unbroken fellowship with God. 11 So look upon your old sin nature as dead and unresponsive to sin, and instead be alive to God, alert to him, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Do not let sin control your puny body any longer; do not give in to its sinful desires. 13 Do not let any part of your bodies become tools of wickedness, to be used for sinning; but give yourselves completely to God—every part of you—for you are back from death and you want to be tools in the hands of God, to be used for his good purposes. 14 Sin need never again be your master, for now you are no longer tied to the law where sin enslaves you, but you are free under God's favour and mercy.

15 Does this mean that now we can go ahead and sin and not worry about it? (For our salvation does not depend on keeping the law but on receiving God's grace!) Of course not!

16 Don't you realize that you can choose your own master? You can choose sin (with death) or else obedience (with acquittal). The one to whom you offer yourself—he will take you and be your master, and you will be his slave. 17 Thank God that though you once chose to be slaves of sin, now you have obeyed with all your heart the teaching to which God has committed you. 18 And now you are free from your old master, sin; and you have become slaves to your new master, righteousness.

19 I speak this way, using the illustration of slaves and masters, because it is easy to understand: just as you used to be slaves to all kinds of sin, so now you must let yourselves be slaves to all that is right and holy.

20 In those days when you were slaves of sin you didn't bother much with goodness. 21 And what was the result? Evidently not good, since you are ashamed now even to think about those things you used to do, for all of them end in eternal doom. 22 But now you are free from the power of sin and are slaves of God, and his benefits to you include holiness and everlasting life. 23 For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

III. **RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:**

- A. Obeying God rather than men or the wisdom of this world. There are so many "forces" trying to pull us away from the Lord, that we can easily get caught up in unbelief (whether a doctrine, teaching, religion, hate, or "fact"). God's utmost desire is that we come to Him through belief in Christ Jesus. And when we do, we receive of Him His Holy Spirit. And from there, not get deceived into forms of unbelief (hardened heart) or of works.

[Acts 5:28-32](#) (TLB)

"Didn't we tell you never again to preach about this Jesus?" the High Priest demanded. "And instead you have filled all Jerusalem with your teaching and intend to bring the blame for this man's death on us!"

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



29 But Peter and the apostles replied, “We must obey God rather than men. 30 The God of our ancestors brought Jesus back to life again after you had killed him by hanging him on a cross. 31 Then, with mighty power, God exalted him to be a Prince and Saviour, so that the people of Israel would have an opportunity for repentance, and for their sins to be forgiven. 32 And we are witnesses of these things and so is the Holy Spirit, who is given by God to all who obey him.”

Romans 10:1-4 (TLB)

Dear brothers, the longing of my heart and my prayer is that the Jewish people might be saved. 2 I know what enthusiasm they have for the honour of God, but it is misdirected zeal. 3 For they don’t understand that Christ has died to make them right with God. Instead they are trying to make themselves good enough to gain God’s favour by keeping the Jewish laws and customs, but that is not God’s way of salvation. 4 They don’t understand that Christ gives to those who trust in him everything they are trying to get by keeping his laws. He ends all of that.

Galatians 3:1-5 (TLB)

Oh, foolish Galatians! What magician has hypnotized you and cast an evil spell upon you? For you used to see the meaning of Jesus Christ’s death as clearly as though I had waved a placard before you with a picture on it of Christ dying on the cross. 2 Let me ask you this one question: Did you receive the Holy Spirit by trying to keep the Jewish laws? Of course not, for the Holy Spirit came upon you only after you heard about Christ and trusted him to save you. 3 Then have you gone completely crazy? For if trying to obey the Jewish laws never gave you spiritual life in the first place, why do you think that trying to obey them now will make you stronger Christians? 4 You have suffered so much for the Gospel. Now are you going to just throw it all overboard? I can hardly believe it!

5 I ask you again, does God give you the power of the Holy Spirit and work miracles among you as a result of your trying to obey the Jewish laws? No, of course not. It is when you believe in Christ and fully trust him

Galatians 5:1-8 (TLB)

So Christ has made us free. Now make sure that you stay free, and don’t get all tied up again in the chains of slavery to Jewish laws and ceremonies. 2 Listen to me, for this is serious: if you are counting on circumcision and keeping the Jewish laws to make you right with God, then Christ cannot save you. 3 I’ll say it again. Anyone trying to find favour with God by being circumcised must always obey every other Jewish law or perish. 4 Christ is useless to you if you are counting on clearing your debt to God by keeping those laws; you are lost from God’s grace.

5 But we by the help of the Holy Spirit are counting on Christ’s death to clear away our sins and make us right with God. 6 And we to whom Christ has given eternal life don’t need to worry about whether we have been circumcised or not, or whether we are obeying the Jewish ceremonies or not; for all we need is faith working through love.

7 You were getting along so well. Who has interfered with you to hold you back from following the truth? 8 It certainly isn’t God who has done it, for he is the one who has called you to freedom in Christ.

Question: What does obedience mean to you?

Response:

- B. Being humble is not being weak (nor humiliating). It is a matter of giving yourself to the Lord to give Him the right to help and assist you in life. His blessings are not based on our “works” or our “faith”, but based on His generosity. Thus, even though we have all spiritual blessings, we make sure He gets the glory, not ourselves.

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



[Luke 14:11](#) (TLB)

“For everyone who tries to honour himself shall be humbled; and he who humbles himself shall be honoured.”

[James 4:6b&7a](#) (TLB)

As the Scripture says, God gives strength to the humble ... 7 So give yourselves humbly to God.

[1 Peter 5:6-7](#) (TLB)

If you will humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, in his good time he will lift you up. 7 Let him have all your worries and cares, for he is always thinking about you and watching everything that concerns you.

Question: What does humility mean to you?

Response:

C. Sometimes, being humble and obedient comes at the cost of self; and sometimes comes with persecution.

[Colossians 3:12-13](#) (TLB) [PoG]

Since you have been chosen by God who has given you this new kind of life, and because of his deep love and concern for you, you should practice tender-hearted [mercies, kindness, humility, and meekness] to others. Don't worry about making a good impression on them, but be ready to suffer quietly and patiently. 13 Be gentle and ready to forgive; never hold grudges. Remember, the Lord forgave you, so you must forgive others.

[Hebrews 5:4-9](#) (TLB)

Another thing to remember is that no one can be a high priest just because he wants to be. He has to be called by God for this work in the same way God chose Aaron.

5 That is why Christ did not elect himself to the honour of being High Priest; no, he was chosen by God. God said to him, “My Son, today I have honoured you.” 6 And another time God said to him, “You have been chosen to be a priest forever, with the same rank as Melchizedek.”

7 Yet while Christ was here on earth he pleaded with God, praying with tears and agony of soul to the only one who would save him from premature death. And God heard his prayers because of his strong desire to obey God at all times.

8 And even though Jesus was God's Son, he had to learn from experience what it was like to obey when obeying meant suffering. 9 It was after he had proved himself perfect in this experience that Jesus became the Giver of eternal salvation to all those who obey him.

Question: Does the cost of self and of persecution make you hesitant to do as the Lord says?

Response:

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



D. Trusting is not always something that comes naturally to our being. Learning to Trust the Lord is something that I have had to develop in me. And I have found it a very important aspect in my relationship with Him—so much so that the title of these Bible Study books is: Trusting the Father. If we don't trust God (like I did for most of my life), why would I want to submit myself to Him. If all He was doing was waiting for me to mess up, so as to punish me, then I'd rather just stay clear of Him and my perceived expectations of following the Law for Him. But this kind of trust entails joy, hopefulness, safety, security, and full confidence ([H982](#) and [G1679](#)).

[Proverbs 3:5b-6](#) (TLB)

trust the Lord completely; don't ever trust yourself. 6 In everything you do, put God first, and he will direct you and crown your efforts with success.

[Romans 8:24-28](#) (TLB)

We are saved by trusting. And trusting means looking forward to getting something we don't yet have—for a man who already has something doesn't need to hope and trust that he will get it. 25 But if we must keep trusting God for something that hasn't happened yet, it teaches us to wait patiently and confidently.

26 And in the same way—by our faith—the Holy Spirit helps us with our daily problems and in our praying. For we don't even know what we should pray for nor how to pray as we should, but the Holy Spirit prays for us with such feeling that it cannot be expressed in words. 27 And the Father who knows all hearts knows, of course, what the Spirit is saying as he pleads for us in harmony with God's own will. 28 And we know that all that happens to us is working for our good if we love God and are fitting into his plans.

Question: Do you find yourself easily trusting the Lord?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [1 Peter 1:14a](#) (TLB)

Obey God because you are his children.

Thoughts: I like to simply believe that: *Humility = Agreeing with God*. And the way I have learned this is through simply obeying Him when He says do something—whether for myself and my own growth, or when it is for someone else. Yet in both humility and obedience, one has to first trust.

One part of my journey with the Lord was learning to trust Him and then humbly be obedient to what He was telling me. Early on, this involved getting healed from something that had plagued my life from my teenage years into my adulthood at almost 40 years old: acne. Not only is having acne as a teenager something I felt shameful of; having it as an adult also carried a shame. I was very self-conscious. So, the Lord used that for me to start trusting Him, and not my "own understanding".

For some people, acne treatments and scripts (including Dermatologists) help the person's condition. However, it was not working for me—even though I was trusting that it eventually would, not knowing anything different.

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



The Holy Spirit then placed on my heart the notion of trusting Him in how He knew best for my own personal self and treatment I needed apart from what I held onto. He didn't condemn me for what I was relying on—no, all He wanted to do was tell me I have a different way specifically for you.

This was extremely hard for me and my flesh. Not only was it about trusting that I was hearing Him correctly, but also just being humble enough to “let go” of what I held to be true for me. What I held was that I had to use the special soaps and creams, because that is what is programmed into me from what I see on acne commercials and such. That the only way to treat it was to go that route; and doing anything else would make it worse. A big fear for me. Yet, I obeyed.

What that looked like was listening to Him about what my skin actually needed and wanted—not the chemical treatments I was used to, but all-natural soaps and lotions that were free from many of the ingredients found in those other products. I went out and bought an olive-oil based moisturising soap. This seemed to opposite to what I held onto; in that to add oil and moisturiser to my face would only have me break out more!

But I didn't break out. I cleared up. What I had been resisting is what was best for me. The Lord knew that, not me. And that little bit of trust brought about a change to my life. It wasn't to do with me “having faith”, nor me “believing more”, but just listening and obeying Him in trust. From then on, I have never had to use the things that may help others. He set me personally free from my fear and shame. This is His Love for me!

And He has the same Love for you in wanting to bring about a specific change in your life. Sometimes it just takes trust, humbleness, and obedience. He wants to see you free from fear, shame, sickness, disease, emotional pain and so much more. And that journey for you will look different than others. You can listen to testimonies of healing shared by so many to help you gain the trust you need in the Lord (as I did). But whether He shares with you to go to a doctor, get medication, counselling, or prayer, just obey Him in whichever path He leads you.

I Hope you find that for each and every part of your being that you need His Life!

B. Ask yourself these questions when it comes to trust:

- How does the Lord act that enables you to trust Him?

Response:

- How do you act with others that enable them to trust you—whether a co-worker, spouse, child, parent, friend, stranger, leader, pastor, or just as a human being?

Response:

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

INTENTION:

“Take my yolk, it is easy” says the Lord. An invitation to be along-side Him as you journey in this world. He never wants you to do life alone. You are His personal child, and He wants to take care of you with you.

He will lead the way, but we must act into that direction He needs us to go in. He cannot force us, we must move as He stays by our side. We have responsibilities here on earth that He asks us to do, so let’s do it with Him, not alone, and neither doing it “for Him” for some kind of acceptance or reward.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at what is Our Responsibility (With the Lord).

The Lord shares with us what we have to take charge of in our lives—things we must choose to do. But in each and every situation, He does it with us. We must never think that what we are instructed to do, we are left alone to do it—the Lord always teams-up with us to help us make the choice that He desires of us.

Sadly, I wrongly believed that it was MY own responsibility to live holy, to be righteous, to be obedient. And I did try, but failed miserably at it each time. This was because I really did try to do it on my own to “please” the Lord. I have since learned that He wants to do with me and through me using His strength and ability in me!

So, when I am instructed to do something—either directly by the Holy Spirit or in reading scripture—I now know that He will provide me that ability to do so. All I need to do (as we learned in the previous lesson) is to be humble, obedient, and trust Him.

If we don’t have this kind of unified relationship with Him, we end up struggling to do it ourselves or praying to the Lord that He do it Himself. But in doing these latter two, the efforts become futile; and we thus remove ourselves from that intimate relationship we have with Him.

Have you ever prayed to the Lord to “move”, only to find He doesn’t? Maybe it’s because He has instructed us to be the ones to “move” (and with Him)—to be the one’s initiating the action with Him. Just as, when He left this earth, He instructed for us to do (acting from belief):

II. READING: [Mark 16:1-20](#) (CEB) [PoG]

When the Sabbath was over, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices so that they could go and anoint Jesus’ dead body. 2 Very early on the first day of the week, just after sunrise, they came to the tomb. 3 They were saying to each other, “Who’s going to roll the stone away from the entrance for us?” 4 When they looked up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away. (And it was a very large stone!) 5 Going into the tomb, they saw a young man in a white robe seated on the right side; and they were startled. 6 But he said to them, “Don’t be alarmed! You are looking for Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He has been raised. He isn’t here. Look, here’s the place where they laid him. 7 Go, tell his disciples, especially Peter, that he is going ahead of you into Galilee. You will see him there, just as he told you.” 8 Overcome with terror and dread, they fled from the tomb. They said nothing to anyone, because they were afraid.

9 After Jesus rose up early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons. 10 She went and reported to the ones who had been with him, who were mourning and weeping. 11 But even after they heard the news, they didn’t believe that Jesus was alive and that Mary had seen him.

12 After that he appeared in a different form to two of them who were walking along in the countryside. 13 When they returned, they reported it to the others, but they didn’t believe them. 14 Finally he appeared to the eleven while they were eating. Jesus criticized their unbelief and stubbornness [hardness of heart] because they didn’t believe those who saw him after he was raised up. 15 He said to them, “Go into the whole world and proclaim the good news to every creature. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever doesn’t believe will be condemned. 17 These signs will be associated with those who believe: they will throw out demons in my name. They will speak in new languages. 18 They will pick up snakes with their hands. If they drink anything poisonous, it will not hurt them. They will place their hands on the sick, and they will get well.”

19 After the Lord Jesus spoke to them, he was lifted up into heaven and sat down on the right side of God. 20 But they went out and proclaimed the message everywhere. The Lord worked with them, confirming the word by the signs associated with them.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Our first responsibility is actually to make the choice to believe in Jesus Christ (and God the Father) for salvation. He desires that everyone would come to Him ([1 Timothy 2:3-4](#)); although He knows not everyone will.

[John 3:16-18](#) (CEB)

God so loved the world that he gave his only Son, so that everyone who believes in him won't perish but will have eternal life. 17 God didn't send his Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved through him. 18 Whoever believes in him isn't judged; whoever doesn't believe in him is already judged, because they don't believe in the name of God's only Son.

Question: Have you believed in Him to be Born-Again for Salvation?

Response:

- B. We are to "work out our own salvation". This is not that we can save ourselves (make ourselves right with God), but being "saved" in the parts of your being that don't yet align with how the Lord does things.

[Philippians 2:12-13](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Therefore, my loved ones, just as you always obey me, not just when I am present but now even more while I am away, carry out [work out] your own salvation with fear and trembling. 13 God is the one who enables you both to want and to actually live out his good purposes.

Question: What areas of your life do you need to acknowledge and have the Lord help you to make right?

Response:

- C. This goes along with the instructions for us to "renew our minds". There are strongholds in our minds that go against the way the Lord operates. Thus, we have to allow Him into our minds to help to think as He thinks.

[2 Corinthians 10:3-5](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Although we live in the world, we don't fight our battles with human methods. 4 Our weapons that we fight with aren't human, but instead they are powered by God for the destruction of fortresses [strongholds]. They destroy arguments, 5 and every defense that is raised up to oppose the knowledge of God. They capture every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

[Ephesians 4:21-24](#) (CEB)

Since you really listened to him and you were taught how the truth is in Jesus, 22 change the former way of life that was part of the person you once were, corrupted by deceitful desires. 23 Instead, renew the thinking in your

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



mind by the Spirit 24 and clothe yourself with the new person created according to God’s image in justice and true holiness.

Question: What thinking do you have that you need the Spirit to help you with?

Response:

- D. We are told to focus on the good, not on the bad. To keep our thoughts from “going down the rabbit hole” into those worst-case scenarios that our mind and imagination can lead us to.

[Philippians 4:8-9](#) (CEB)

From now on, brothers and sisters, if anything is excellent and if anything is admirable, focus your thoughts on these things: all that is true, all that is holy, all that is just, all that is pure, all that is lovely, and all that is worthy of praise. 9 Practice these things: whatever you learned, received, heard, or saw in us. The God of peace will be with you.

Question: Do you find it easier to think and dwell on the negative versus the positive?

Response:

- E. We are to address our own unbelief by exposing and removing it. And we can do this through fasting and prayer.

[Matthew 17:19-21](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Then the disciples came to Jesus in private and said, “Why couldn’t we throw the demon out?”

20 “Because you have [unbelief],” he said. “I assure you that if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you could say to this mountain, ‘Go from here to there,’ and it will go. There will be nothing that you can’t do. This kind [*of unbelief*] doesn’t come out except through prayer and fasting.

Question: What does prayer and fasting signify to you?

Response:

- F. Our flesh has a desire of its own. Yet we are told to be “living sacrifices”—not that we must sacrifice ourselves everyday, but that we were sacrificed once and for all time at the Cross when we believed. Our duty now is to live as someone that HAS sacrificed their “old self”, living now as a “resurrected new self” (raised with Christ). For we live as Jesus in the here and now ([1 John 4:17b](#)).

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



[Romans 6:13b](#) (CEB)

present yourselves to God as people who have been brought back to life from the dead, and offer all the parts of your body to God to be used as weapons to do right.

[Romans 12:1-2](#) (CEB)

So, brothers and sisters, because of God’s mercies, I encourage you to present your bodies as a living sacrifice that is holy and pleasing to God. This is your appropriate priestly service. 2 Don’t be conformed to the patterns of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your minds so that you can figure out what God’s will is— what is good and pleasing and mature.

Question: Do you consider your “old self” (flesh) already dead and without power in your life?

Response:

- G. Anything that goes against the Lord (and us in Him) is the Devil. We must resist those opposing, slanderous, maliciously false accusations (statements), and the injury faced by misrepresentation.

[James 4:7](#) (CEB)

Therefore, submit to God. Resist the devil, and he will run away from you.

Question: Do you find it hard to discern what you hear as being opposing and misrepresenting to the Lord?

Response:

- H. To help against those attacks by the devil, we must put on the Armour of God. He provides it for us (His Armour), but it is up to us to wear it!

[Ephesians 6:10-17](#) (CEB)

Finally, be strengthened by the Lord and his powerful strength. 11 Put on God’s armour so that you can make a stand against the tricks of the devil. 12 We aren’t fighting against human enemies but against rulers, authorities, forces of cosmic darkness, and spiritual powers of evil in the heavens. 13 Therefore, pick up the full armour of God so that you can stand your ground on the evil day and after you have done everything possible to still stand. 14 So stand with the belt of truth around your waist, justice as your breastplate, 15 and put shoes on your feet so that you are ready to spread the good news of peace. 16 Above all, carry the shield of faith so that you can extinguish the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is God’s word.

Question: Are you dressed for battle?

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



Response:

- I. We are to demonstrate the Gifts of the Spirit. We can operate in each and every one (as Jesus did), but we have to choose to listen to the Holy Spirit to gift each one out to the people who need it.

[1 Corinthians 12:4-11](#) (CEB)

There are different spiritual gifts but the same Spirit; 5 and there are different ministries and the same Lord; 6 and there are different activities but the same God who produces all of them in everyone. 7 A demonstration of the Spirit is given to each person for the common good. 8 A word of wisdom is given by the Spirit to one person, a word of knowledge to another according to the same Spirit, 9 faith to still another by the same Spirit, gifts of healing to another in the one Spirit, 10 performance of miracles to another, prophecy to another, the ability to tell spirits apart to another, different kinds of tongues to another, and the interpretation of the tongues to another. 11 All these things are produced by the one and same Spirit who gives what he wants to each person.

Question: Have you seen yourself ministering any Gifts of the Spirit to anyone?

Response:

- J. As our previous Bible Lesson shared, we are to submit to the Lord, humbly, and in trust. And when in partnership with the Gifts of the Holy Spirit, we will be doing "as on earth as it is in heaven" ([Matthew 6:10](#)). And though we have the freedom to do anything we want, we have to choose to submit all we do in line with the Lord.

[Romans 6:16](#) (CEB)

Don't you know that if you offer yourselves to someone as obedient slaves, that you are slaves of the one whom you obey? That's true whether you serve as slaves of sin, which leads to death, or as slaves of the kind of obedience that leads to righteousness

[1 Corinthians 6:12](#) (CEB)

I have the freedom to do anything, but not everything is helpful. I have the freedom to do anything, but I won't be controlled by anything.

Question: Who or what do you find yourself submitting to (obeying) over the Lord?

Response:

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



K. As our opening scripture says in [Mark 16](#), we must heal the sick, cast out demons, and all the things Jesus showed us to do (and more). All we have to do is believe, ask, and act.

[Luke 10:19b](#) (CEB)

I have given you authority over all the power of the enemy. Nothing will harm you

[John 14:12-14](#) (CEB)

I assure you that whoever believes in me will do the works that I do. They will do even greater works than these because I am going to the Father. 13 I will do whatever you ask for in my name, so that the Father can be glorified in the Son. 14 When you ask me for anything in my name, I will do it.

Question: Have you performed any of the same “signs and wonders” that Jesus demonstrated for us?

Response:

L. We manifest the Fruit of the Spirit ([Galatians 5:22-23](#)) by staying connected to Jesus and feed from His vine!

[John 15:1-8](#) (CEB) [PoG]

“I am the true vine, and my Father is the vineyard keeper. 2 He [raises up] any of my branches that don’t produce fruit, and he [cleanses] any branch that produces fruit so that it will produce even more fruit. 3 You are already trimmed because of the word I have spoken to you. 4 Remain in me, and I will remain in you. A branch can’t produce fruit by itself, but must remain in the vine. Likewise, you can’t produce fruit unless you remain in me. 5 I am the vine; you are the branches. If you remain in me and I in you, then you will produce much fruit. Without me, you can’t do anything. 6 If you don’t remain in me, you will be like a branch that is thrown out and dries up. Those branches are gathered up, thrown into a fire, and burned. 7 If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask for whatever you want and it will be done for you. 8 My Father is glorified when you produce much fruit and in this way prove that you are my disciples.”

Question: As a branch, are you drawing from the vine to produce much fruit?

Response:

M. We must also forgive—not only others, but ourselves. The Lord has completely forgiven you and the others who have hurt you or been hurt by you; so, let us also forgive as He did. Forgiving yourself can also let go of guilt.

[Colossians 3:12-14](#) (CEB)

Therefore, as God’s choice, holy and loved, put on compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness, and patience. 13 Be tolerant with each other and, if someone has a complaint against anyone, forgive each other. As the Lord forgave you, so also forgive each other. 14 And over all these things put on love, which is the perfect bond of unity.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



Question: Is it difficult for you to forgive others or even yourself?

Response:

N. We all make mistakes. To help us and others heal from pain caused, we need to admit to our mistakes.

[James 5:13-16](#) (CEB)

If any of you are suffering, they should pray. If any of you are happy, they should sing. 14 If any of you are sick, they should call for the elders of the church, and the elders should pray over them, anointing them with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 Prayer that comes from faith will heal the sick, for the Lord will restore them to health. And if they have sinned, they will be forgiven. 16 For this reason, confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of the righteous person is powerful in what it can achieve.

Question: Do you find that unforgiveness or guilt affects your mental, emotional, or physical health?

Response:

O. When we do find ourselves making mistakes, we must never be “troubled by a consciousness of sin” ([G677](#)).

[Acts 24:16](#) (CEB)

On account of this, I have committed myself to maintaining a clear conscience before God and with all people.

Question: Do you feel you focus more on your sins and trying not to; or on your Christ-given righteousness?

Response:

P. It is also from a clear heart that we should give, knowing that the Lord will supply for your giving.

[2 Corinthians 9:5-8](#) (CEB)

This is why I thought it was necessary to encourage the brothers to go to you ahead of time and arrange in advance the generous gift you have already promised. I want it to be a real gift from you. I don't want you to feel like you are being forced to give anything. 6 What I mean is this: the one who sows a small number of seeds will also reap a small crop, and the one who sows a generous amount of seeds will also reap a generous crop. 7 Everyone should give whatever they have decided in their heart. They shouldn't give with hesitation or because of pressure. God loves a cheerful giver. 8 God has the power to provide you with more than enough of every kind of grace. That way, you will have everything you need always and in everything to provide more than enough for every kind of good work.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



Question: Is it sometimes hard for you to give, especially when you feel you don't have enough to give?

Response:

Q. Prayer is a necessity. Remember, even Jesus prayed. So, let us pray too!

[Acts 4:29-31](#) (CEB)

Now, Lord, take note of their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with complete confidence. 30 Stretch out your hand to bring healing and enable signs and wonders to be performed through the name of Jesus, your holy servant." 31 After they prayed, the place where they were gathered was shaken. They were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began speaking God's word with confidence.

Question: Why do you think prayer is important?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Hebrews 5:11-13; 6:1-2](#) (CEB) [PoG]

We have a lot to say about this topic, and it's difficult to explain, because you have been lazy and you haven't been listening. 12 Although you should have been teachers by now, you need someone to teach you an introduction to the basics about God's message. You have come to the place where you need milk instead of solid food. 13 Everyone who lives on milk is not used to the word of righteousness, because they are babies.

So let's press on to maturity, by moving on from the basics about Christ's word. Let's not lay [all over again] a foundation of turning away from dead works, of faith in God, 2 of teaching about ritual ways to wash with water, laying on of hands, the resurrection from the dead, and eternal judgment.

Thoughts: We are always growing in our relationship with the Lord. We come to new or deeper understandings. We start living the Life of Christ in and through us. We do with Him the things He asks. We even commune with others in our progression.

In doing so, we become mature (growing) in our knowledge of the Lord—getting past the milk that is the "elementary principles of Christ" and eating real "meat". And as we grow, we can also immerse (baptise) others in the same correct knowledge of the Lord; thus, making disciples as we are instructed to do as well:

[Matthew 28:18-20](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Jesus came near and spoke to them, "I've received all authority in heaven and on earth. 19 Therefore, go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing [immersing] them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, 20 teaching them to obey everything that I've commanded you. Look, I myself will be with you every day until the end of this present age."

MONEY, TITHE, & GIVING

INTENTION:

If you felt guilty reading that title, then this is what you need to hear.

So, be free from that guilt!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Money, Tithe, and Giving.

Money is simply a tool. It doesn't matter how much or how little money you make or have—it is how you use it, and what your heart-condition is about money. And if the Lord personally wants you to give or to tithe or to save, then just do. This is not about some magic formula or doctrine, but about your personal relationship with the Lord.

Money is not evil; but it can be used for good and for bad. This is why the Lord asks us to be responsible in both His Kingdom affairs and the worldly affairs we deal in. He understands that money is a reality of this world and uses it for us and for others. If having a lot of money was a sin, then Solomon would be the greatest money-sinner ever.

When our focus becomes on the money we have (wealth) or do not have (poverty), then we are making it a god above the Lord. We cannot serve two masters (the Lord and money). Thus, we must always let Him provide and be our Financial Advisor; allowing Him to use us as vessels to contain or distribute as He desires. When we put money first, we limit God. When we put God first (seeking His Kingdom first), He provides for ALL our needs.

He wants to provide for us that we become a blessing and provider to others as Abraham was ([Genesis 12:2b](#)). Everywhere Abraham went, he left the place better off than it was when he got there; gaining more as he went.

Let us do the same by leaving things in a better condition than when we got there. And allow the Lord's blessings to flow through you as He provides for both the person giving and the person receiving. He instructs us to ask Him for whatever; so, ask. He will give in connection with His Kingdom responsibility. You just need to be responsible for what He gives you. When you learn to take care of little, then don't be surprised when He has you take care of much.

II. READING: [Luke 16:1-15](#) (NLT)

Jesus told this story to his disciples: "There was a certain rich man who had a manager handling his affairs. One day a report came that the manager was wasting his employer's money. 2 So the employer called him in and said, 'What's this I hear about you? Get your report in order, because you are going to be fired.'

3 "The manager thought to himself, 'Now what? My boss has fired me. I don't have the strength to dig ditches, and I'm too proud to beg. 4 Ah, I know how to ensure that I'll have plenty of friends who will give me a home when I am fired.'

5 "So he invited each person who owed money to his employer to come and discuss the situation. He asked the first one, 'How much do you owe him?' 6 The man replied, 'I owe him 800 gallons of olive oil.' So the manager told him, 'Take the bill and quickly change it to 400 gallons.'

7 "'And how much do you owe my employer?' he asked the next man. 'I owe him 1,000 bushels of wheat,' was the reply. 'Here,' the manager said, 'take the bill and change it to 800 bushels.'

8 "The rich man had to admire the dishonest rascal for being so shrewd. And it is true that the children of this world are more shrewd in dealing with the world around them than are the children of the light. 9 Here's the lesson: Use your worldly resources to benefit others and make friends. Then, when your possessions are gone, they will welcome you to an eternal home.

10 "If you are faithful in little things, you will be faithful in large ones. But if you are dishonest in little things, you won't be honest with greater responsibilities. 11 And if you are untrustworthy about worldly wealth, who will trust you with the true riches of heaven? 12 And if you are not faithful with other people's things, why should you be trusted with things of your own?

13 "No one can serve two masters. For you will hate one and love the other; you will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and be enslaved to money."

14 The Pharisees, who dearly loved their money, heard all this and scoffed at him. 15 Then he said to them, "You like to appear righteous in public, but God knows your hearts. What this world honours is detestable in the sight of God.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Offerings and sacrifices are something that has been done throughout the course of the Bible. It is also something we see in many cultures and other religions in a worship or appeasement of a god. Before it became a requirement of the Law for the Israelites to do, it was done voluntarily by Cain and Abel, as well as Job. What got Cain in trouble was his heart condition behind his offering—not because it was grain versus meat. Both grain and meat offerings are a pleasant aroma to the Lord ([Leviticus 2 & 3](#)). But even though Cain’s gift wasn’t accepted, the Lord did not remove His Grace and Love from Cain, protecting him with a mark, and blessing his son Enoch. Job, who lived shortly after the Flood, offered for his children without instruction from the Lord to do so.

[Genesis 4:1-5](#) (NLT)

Now Adam had sexual relations with his wife, Eve, and she became pregnant. When she gave birth to Cain, she said, “With the Lord’s help, I have produced a man!” 2 Later she gave birth to his brother and named him Abel.

When they grew up, Abel became a shepherd, while Cain cultivated the ground. 3 When it was time for the harvest, Cain presented some of his crops as a gift to the Lord. 4 Abel also brought a gift—the best portions of the firstborn lambs from his flock. The Lord accepted Abel and his gift, 5 but he did not accept Cain and his gift. This made Cain very angry, and he looked dejected.

[Hebrews 11:4-5](#) (NLT)

It was by faith that Abel brought a more acceptable offering to God than Cain did. Abel’s offering gave evidence that he was a righteous man, and God showed his approval of his gifts. Although Abel is long dead, he still speaks to us by his example of faith.

5 It was by faith that Enoch was taken up to heaven without dying—“he disappeared, because God took him.” For before he was taken up, he was known as a person who pleased God.

[Job 1:4-5](#) (NLT)

Job’s sons would take turns preparing feasts in their homes, and they would also invite their three sisters to celebrate with them. 5 When these celebrations ended—sometimes after several days—Job would purify his children. He would get up early in the morning and offer a burnt offering for each of them. For Job said to himself, “Perhaps my children have sinned and have cursed God in their hearts.” This was Job’s regular practice.

[Job 42:7-9](#) (NLT)

After the Lord had finished speaking to Job, he said to Eliphaz the Temanite: “I am angry with you and your two friends, for you have not spoken accurately about me, as my servant Job has. 8 So take seven bulls and seven rams and go to my servant Job and offer a burnt offering for yourselves. My servant Job will pray for you, and I will accept his prayer on your behalf. I will not treat you as you deserve, for you have not spoken accurately about me, as my servant Job has.” 9 So Eliphaz the Temanite, Bildad the Shuhite, and Zophar the Naamathite did as the Lord commanded them, and the Lord accepted Job’s prayer.

Question: Why do you think these people made offerings to the Lord before the Law mandated it?

Response:

- B. Abraham also gave without mandate to the priest, Melchizedek. This giving of 10% of the spoils of war is defined as a tithe: meaning ten percent of something ([H4643](#)). Abraham gave, not because it was a tithe, but because he gave from his heart to the man of God. There was no requirement to give 10% (he could have given 4% or 40%), but he chose from his own heart that it be 10% (thus, literally a tithe). We too also only see this done once, not again and again out of repetition, command, or tradition. It was a one-and-done matter. Thus, when we look at Abraham as tithing, it is not necessary for us to do the same. Likewise for Jacob's tithe. We don't have the Law requirement to tithe, nor do we have to tithe based on what Abraham or Jacob did.

[Genesis 14:17-20](#) (NLT)

After Abram returned from his victory over Kedorlaomer and all his allies, the king of Sodom went out to meet him in the valley of Shaveh (that is, the King's Valley).

18 And Melchizedek, the king of Salem and a priest of God Most High, brought Abram some bread and wine. 19 Melchizedek blessed Abram with this blessing:

“Blessed be Abram by God Most High, Creator of heaven and earth.

20 And blessed be God Most High who has defeated your enemies for you.”

Then Abram gave Melchizedek a tenth of all the goods he had recovered.

[Genesis 28:16-22](#) (NLT)

Then Jacob awoke from his sleep and said, “Surely the Lord is in this place, and I wasn't even aware of it!” 17 But he was also afraid and said, “What an awesome place this is! It is none other than the house of God, the very gateway to heaven!”

18 The next morning Jacob got up very early. He took the stone he had rested his head against, and he set it upright as a memorial pillar. Then he poured olive oil over it. 19 He named that place Bethel (which means “house of God”), although it was previously called Luz.

20 Then Jacob made this vow: “If God will indeed be with me and protect me on this journey, and if he will provide me with food and clothing, 21 and if I return safely to my father's home, then the Lord will certainly be my God. 22 And this memorial pillar I have set up will become a place for worshiping God, and I will present to God a tenth of everything he gives me.”.

Question: Why do you think Abraham and Jacob gave 10% of what they had?

Response:

- C. The Laws of Moses commanded a tithe. But we must remember that the Law was not given to all the peoples of the earth, but to a selected group of people: the Israelites. Anyone outside of the Israelites (the “Uncircumcised” / Gentiles) were never under the Law; thus, it was not a requirement of them to tithe or do offerings and sacrifices. Furthermore, the entire world now lives post-Cross. Jesus Christ fulfilled the Law and all its curses, making it null and void for the Israelites (or anyone). Jesus was the tithe, offering, and sacrifice for all humanity.

[Leviticus 27:30-33](#) (NLT)

“One-tenth of the produce of the land, whether grain from the fields or fruit from the trees, belongs to the Lord and must be set apart to him as holy. 31 If you want to buy back the Lord's tenth of the grain or fruit, you must

pay its value, plus 20 percent. 32 Count off every tenth animal from your herds and flocks and set them apart for the Lord as holy. 33 You may not pick and choose between good and bad animals, and you may not substitute one for another. But if you do exchange one animal for another, then both the original animal and its substitute will be considered holy and cannot be bought back.”

[Galatians 3:10-14](#) (NLT)

But those who depend on the law to make them right with God are under his curse, for the Scriptures say, “Cursed is everyone who does not observe and obey all the commands that are written in God’s Book of the Law.” 11 So it is clear that no one can be made right with God by trying to keep the law. For the Scriptures say, “It is through faith that a righteous person has life.” 12 This way of faith is very different from the way of law, which says, “It is through obeying the law that a person has life.”

13 But Christ has rescued us from the curse pronounced by the law. When he was hung on the cross, he took upon himself the curse for our wrongdoing. For it is written in the Scriptures, “Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree.” 14 Through Christ Jesus, God has blessed the Gentiles with the same blessing he promised to Abraham, so that we who are believers might receive the promised Holy Spirit through faith.

[Ephesians 2:11-19](#) (NLT)

Don’t forget that you Gentiles used to be outsiders. You were called “uncircumcised heathens” by the Jews, who were proud of their circumcision, even though it affected only their bodies and not their hearts. 12 In those days you were living apart from Christ. You were excluded from citizenship among the people of Israel, and you did not know the covenant promises God had made to them. You lived in this world without God and without hope. 13 But now you have been united with Christ Jesus. Once you were far away from God, but now you have been brought near to him through the blood of Christ.

14 For Christ himself has brought peace to us. He united Jews and Gentiles into one people when, in his own body on the cross, he broke down the wall of hostility that separated us. 15 He did this by ending the system of law with its commandments and regulations. He made peace between Jews and Gentiles by creating in himself one new people from the two groups. 16 Together as one body, Christ reconciled both groups to God by means of his death on the cross, and our hostility toward each other was put to death.

17 He brought this Good News of peace to you Gentiles who were far away from him, and peace to the Jews who were near. 18 Now all of us can come to the Father through the same Holy Spirit because of what Christ has done for us.

19 So now you Gentiles are no longer strangers and foreigners. You are citizens along with all of God’s holy people. You are members of God’s family.

Question: Does being free of obligation (the Law) change how you view money, possessions, or giving?

Response:

- D. Jesus criticized the Pharisees for their tithing. The Pharisees never gave out of heart or want, but of ritual. They saw it as an accomplishment to brag about in their plenty when so many others were struggling to just provide an offering. Jesus even saw how the money exchangers took advantage of the poor and chased them out of the Temple twice ([John 2:13-16](#) and [Matthew 21:12-13](#))!

[Matthew 23:23](#) (NLT)

“What sorrow awaits you teachers of religious law and you Pharisees. Hypocrites! For you are careful to tithe even the tiniest income from your herb gardens, but you ignore the more important aspects of the law—justice, mercy, and faith. You should tithe, yes, but do not neglect the more important things.

[Mark 12:41-11](#) (NLT)

Jesus sat down near the collection box in the Temple and watched as the crowds dropped in their money. Many rich people put in large amounts. 42 Then a poor widow came and dropped in two small coins.

43 Jesus called his disciples to him and said, “I tell you the truth, this poor widow has given more than all the others who are making contributions. 44 For they gave a tiny part of their surplus, but she, poor as she is, has given everything she had to live on.”

[Luke 18:9-14](#) (NLT)

Then Jesus told this story to some who had great confidence in their own righteousness and scorned everyone else: 10 “Two men went to the Temple to pray. One was a Pharisee, and the other was a despised tax collector. 11 The Pharisee stood by himself and prayed this prayer: ‘I thank you, God, that I am not like other people—cheaters, sinners, adulterers. I’m certainly not like that tax collector! 12 I fast twice a week, and I give you a tenth of my income.’

13 “But the tax collector stood at a distance and dared not even lift his eyes to heaven as he prayed. Instead, he beat his chest in sorrow, saying, ‘O God, be merciful to me, for I am a sinner.’ 14 I tell you, this sinner, not the Pharisee, returned home justified before God. For those who exalt themselves will be humbled, and those who humble themselves will be exalted.”.

Question: Do you find it hard to give when it involves relying on the Lord for what you are giving away?

Response:

- E. Giving because we can and want to. This is why Abel, Abraham, Jacob, Job, and so many others outside the Law chose to give (whether a 10% tithe or any other amount or offering). We see this willingness to give from the heart through Paul’s message and through the early church group in Acts. Those people in the early church of Acts didn’t give out of obligation, nor even a tithe, but truly felt in their hearts that all that they had belonged to the Lord, not themselves. Thus, it was easy for them to share and give any or all they had for others. They demonstrated a freedom from the stronghold of riches; not relying on how much they had or didn’t have, but relying on the Lord as their provider. A person that solely relies on riches will have much difficulty experiencing the Righteousness, Peace, and Joy that is the Kingdom of God ([Romans 14:17](#)).

[Mark 10:23-25](#) (NLT)

23 Jesus looked around and said to his disciples, “How hard it is for the rich to enter the Kingdom of God!” 24 This amazed them. But Jesus said again, “Dear children, it is very hard to enter the Kingdom of God. 25 In fact, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich person to enter the Kingdom of God!”

[Acts 4:32-37](#) (NLT)

All the believers were united in heart and mind. And they felt that what they owned was not their own, so they shared everything they had. 33 The apostles testified powerfully to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and God's great blessing was upon them all. 34 There were no needy people among them, because those who owned land or houses would sell them 35 and bring the money to the apostles to give to those in need.

36 For instance, there was Joseph, the one the apostles nicknamed Barnabas (which means "Son of Encouragement"). He was from the tribe of Levi and came from the island of Cyprus. 37 He sold a field he owned and brought the money to the apostles.

[2 Corinthians 9:7-15](#) (NLT)

You must each decide in your heart how much to give. And don't give reluctantly or in response to pressure. "For God loves a person who gives cheerfully." 8 And God will generously provide all you need. Then you will always have everything you need and plenty left over to share with others. 9 As the Scriptures say,

"They share freely and give generously to the poor. Their good deeds will be remembered forever."

10 For God is the one who provides seed for the farmer and then bread to eat. In the same way, he will provide and increase your resources and then produce a great harvest of generosity in you.

11 Yes, you will be enriched in every way so that you can always be generous. And when we take your gifts to those who need them, they will thank God. 12 So two good things will result from this ministry of giving—the needs of the believers in Jerusalem will be met, and they will joyfully express their thanks to God.

13 As a result of your ministry, they will give glory to God. For your generosity to them and to all believers will prove that you are obedient to the Good News of Christ. 14 And they will pray for you with deep affection because of the overflowing grace God has given to you. 15 Thank God for this gift too wonderful for words!

Question: Do you feel pressured to give or to tithe; instead of being allowed to give from your heart?

Response:

- F. The Lord is always looking out and providing for our needs. It can be easy to stray from that trust into a reliance on "getting" to try and bring comfort and peace to one's life. We must always look at money as a tool that can be used by the Lord, not as something to trust in over the Lord. So whether you have a great deal of money, or are lacking in it, our obligation is to still trust the Lord over the money. It's not a sin to be wealthy or poor. So, let's be content regardless of how much we have or do not have.

[Matthew 6:24-34](#) (NLT)

"No one can serve two masters. For you will hate one and love the other; you will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and be enslaved to money.

25 "That is why I tell you not to worry about everyday life—whether you have enough food and drink, or enough clothes to wear. Isn't life more than food, and your body more than clothing? 26 Look at the birds. They don't plant or harvest or store food in barns, for your heavenly Father feeds them. And aren't you far more valuable to him than they are? 27 Can all your worries add a single moment to your life?

28 “And why worry about your clothing? Look at the lilies of the field and how they grow. They don’t work or make their clothing, 29 yet Solomon in all his glory was not dressed as beautifully as they are. 30 And if God cares so wonderfully for wildflowers that are here today and thrown into the fire tomorrow, he will certainly care for you. Why do you have so little faith?

31 “So don’t worry about these things, saying, ‘What will we eat? What will we drink? What will we wear?’ 32 These things dominate the thoughts of unbelievers, but your heavenly Father already knows all your needs. 33 Seek the Kingdom of God above all else, and live righteously, and he will give you everything you need.

34 “So don’t worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will bring its own worries. Today’s trouble is enough for today.”

[Philippians 4:10-13](#) (NLT)

How I praise the Lord that you are concerned about me again. I know you have always been concerned for me, but you didn’t have the chance to help me. 11 Not that I was ever in need, for I have learned how to be content with whatever I have. 12 I know how to live on almost nothing or with everything. I have learned the secret of living in every situation, whether it is with a full stomach or empty, with plenty or little. 13 For I can do everything through Christ, who gives me strength.

[1 Timothy 6:6-10](#) (NLT)

Yet true godliness with contentment is itself great wealth. 7 After all, we brought nothing with us when we came into the world, and we can’t take anything with us when we leave it. 8 So if we have enough food and clothing, let us be content.

9 But people who long to be rich fall into temptation and are trapped by many foolish and harmful desires that plunge them into ruin and destruction. 10 For the love of money is the root of all kinds of evil. And some people, craving money, have wandered from the true faith and pierced themselves with many sorrows.

[Hebrews 13:5-6](#) (NLT)

Don’t love money; be satisfied with what you have. For God has said,

“I will never fail you. I will never abandon you.”

6 So we can say with confidence,

“The Lord is my helper, so I will have no fear. What can mere people do to me?”

Question: Do you find it hard to trust the Lord when it comes to finances?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Malachi 3:8-9](#) (NLT)

“Should people cheat God? Yet you have cheated me! “But you ask, ‘What do you mean? When did we ever cheat you?’ “You have cheated me of the tithes and offerings due to me. 9 You are under a curse, for your whole nation has been cheating me.”

[Acts 5:1-4](#) (NLT)

But there was a certain man named Ananias who, with his wife, Sapphira, sold some property. 2 He brought part of the money to the apostles, claiming it was the full amount. With his wife's consent, he kept the rest.

3 Then Peter said, "Ananias, why have you let Satan fill your heart? You lied to the Holy Spirit, and you kept some of the money for yourself. 4 The property was yours to sell or not sell, as you wished. And after selling it, the money was also yours to give away. How could you do a thing like this? You weren't lying to us but to God!"

Thoughts: Don't let people tell you that you are stealing from God by not tithing, or that if you don't give "as you're supposed to" you are cursed, or that if you "lie to God", that He has the right to kill you. Remember, you are not under the Law nor under a curse if you don't give or tithe—Christ took all those curses. For Ananias and Sapphira, as was discussed in Bible Lesson 004, God didn't strike them down; their guilt-laden hearts killed them. They literally "gave up their own spirits" ([Acts 5:5,10 AKJV](#)). If they had a clear conscience, their heart wouldn't have failed them even though they omitted the truth of their giving in their selfishness.

For me, one of the growth moments in my relationship with the Lord was Him helping me let go of the control money and things had on my life. At a point in my life, I was proud of finishing University, getting a nice job, a new car, and a lovely flat to live and furnish. But through all that, I did not manage my finances that well. I was sloppy with my spending and lacking in my saving. Regardless of how much I earned, I always seemed to live above my means. I needed to start trusting God the Father for my life and His ability to get me out of debt.

One way He did this was actually to get me to tithe. Yes, tithing is not a requirement, but that doesn't mean He can't use it as a lesson for someone. The lesson for me was letting go of money I never felt I had enough of to go towards ministry's that I felt fed from—including helping support missionaries.

Somehow, even though I was down to my last dollars, I was never without. He took care of me even though I gave 10% of my income. I learned that if He says give, to give—even if it's 100% or 10%. And this in turn helped my heart align with receiving what others came to give me through their giving or tithing (as the Lord led them).

One such time that we gave 100% was when Kelly and I left the United States to go to South Africa for our mission and ministry work. Not fully knowing what we were going to be doing, nor how we were going to support ourselves, we put all our trust in the Lord.

The Lord placed on our heart to give everything away that we owned (except for the clothes and few things that would fit in our luggage). We gave clothes, furniture, kitchenware, and more to people we knew or charities. We sold some things as a means to give value to the person we were giving to. But even then, the money we got from the sale, He had us donate to a family in need that also received some of our donated goods.

Thus, without collecting any money from our belongings, having them belong to the Lord instead, we were provided for by the Lord through the church we had called home in the States. We were blessed—not because we gave, but He gave out of His Heart as His children. We relied on Him in obedience to what He instructed.

Nevertheless, I am still learning; but always know He is providing—even when I don't see how I will get through the day, week, month, or season I am in.

LOVES

INTENTION:

Who and what do you “love”; and what kind of “love” is it?

Our goal is to *Agape* Love the Lord your God with all your being; and then to *Agape* Love others the same way—oh,
and that includes *Agape* Loving yourself!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Loves.

I use the word love as a plural: loves. This is because there are different variations of love in life. For the Bible, there are [over 35 variations in both the Hebrew and Greek Lexicons](#). However, we will focus on a few Greek variants with a better understanding of what God's Love is as Agape Love: [G25](#), [G26](#), and [G27](#) as is defined in [1 Corinthians 13:4-8a](#).

That this kind of Love exists is a proof that God exists, because: God = Love; and therefore: Love = God. Without Love, there is no God; and without God, there is no Love. This true nature of God's character as "Agape Love" is what we should strive to see, learn, and understand. When we see God through this Agape-Love-Reality, we open up so many more dimensions in our relationship with Him; and trust Him even more in each aspect of our daily lives. This trust helps in your ability to Agape Love Him back, in lieu of loving other things over God.

This Agape Love that the Lord demonstrates to us is one that is fully unconditional. He doesn't love us because we love Him or that we live right; He loves us because He cannot not love us. Yet, in this world, we tend to treat love with conditions: that I can only love if I'm treated with respect or without hurt. Furthermore, we tend to water-down love by using the same word for so many variations of love—we say "I love" to mom, dad, brother, sister, spouse, dog, cat, an outfit, a movie, a musician, artwork, nature, the food we eat, and more. Yet, as we will see, there are really different forms of love to that one word. Let's make sure we use the correct one for the correct purpose.

Additionally, we need to view love as neutral—in that it can be used in a positive way or negative way. We can in essence love things that can lead us into destruction, not build up. These include loving money, career, humanitarian services, mission work, outreach, or other things that can easily lead to a "look at me and how I'm loving" attitude. So, just because you can be doing something good like outreach work to feed the poor, it can be done in a selfish love, rather than a Love as for the Lord. We become "doing FOR the Lord" instead of "doing WITH the Lord".

Not all Bible translations distinguish between some of these types of love; including brotherly love ([G5360](#)), friendship / fondness love ([G5368](#)), and others. However, we will look at one translation that does make this distinction and helps us better understand Jesus's conversation with Peter:

II. READING: [John 21:15-19](#) (NTE) [PoG]

So when they had eaten breakfast, Jesus spoke to Simon Peter.

'Simon, son of [\[Jonah\]](#),' he said, 'do you love ([G25](#)) me more than these?'

'Yes, Master,' he said. 'You know I'm your friend [I'm fond of you] ([G5368](#)).'

'Well, then,' he said, 'feed my lambs.'

16 'Simon, son of [\[Jonah\]](#),' said Jesus again, for a second time, 'do you love ([G25](#)) me?'

'Yes, Master,' he said. 'You know I'm your friend [I'm fond of you] ([G5368](#)).'

'Well, then,' he said, 'look after my sheep.'

17 'Simon, son of [\[Jonah\]](#),' said Jesus a third time, 'are you [*even*] my friend [fond of me] ([G5368](#))?'

Peter was upset that on this third time Jesus asked, 'Are you [*even*] my friend [fond of me] ([G5368](#))?'

'Master,' he said, 'you know everything! You know I'm your friend [fond of you] ([G5368](#))!'

'Well, then,' said Jesus, 'feed my sheep.'

18 'I'm telling you the solemn truth,' he went on. 'When you were young, you put on your own clothes and went about wherever you wanted. But when you are old, you'll stretch out your hands, and someone else will dress you up and take you where you don't want to go.'

19 He said this to indicate the sort of death by which Peter would bring God glory. And when he had said this, he added, 'Follow me!'

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. God is Love. And this is not just any variant of love, but that specific Agape Love. This is how He Loves us, and asks that we Love Him and others with. It is something we have the God-Given ability to do. It is His provision to us, in us, and out through us! How we perceive His Love (type of Love) for us is often how we love others. But when we have a complete understanding of His Love, we in turn can let that Love flow freely out from us. Knowing that He Loves us gives us the trust we desire to enable us to also Love.

1 John 4:7-19 (NTE)

Beloved (G27), let us love (G25) one another, because love (G26) is from God, and all who love (G25) are fathered by God and know God. 8 The one who does not love (G25) has not known God, because God is love (G26). 9 This is how God’s love (G26) has appeared among us: God sent his only son into the world, so that we should live through him. 10 Love (G26) consists in this: not that we loved (G25) God, but that he loved (G25) us and sent his son to be the sacrifice that would atone for our sins. 11 Beloved (G27), if that’s how God loved (G25) us, we ought to love (G25) one another in the same way. 12 Nobody has ever seen God. If we love (G25) one another, God abides in us and his love (G26) is completed in us. 13 That is how we know that we abide in him, and he in us, because he has given us a portion of his spirit. 14 And we have seen and bear witness that the father sent the son to be the world’s saviour. 15 Anyone who confesses that Jesus is God’s son, God abides in them and they abide in God. 16 And we have known and have believed the love (G26) which God has for us.

God is love (G26); those who abide in love (G26) abide in God, and God abides in them. 17 This is what makes love (G26) complete for us, so that we may have boldness and confidence on the day of judgment, because just as he is, so are we within this world. 18 There is no fear in love (G26); complete love (G26) drives out fear. Fear has to do with punishment, and anyone who is afraid has not been completed in love (G26). 19 We love (G25), because he first loved (G25) us.

Question: What are ways we can recognise this kind of Agape Love from the Lord?

Response:

B. With the Lord being this Agape Love, they tell us they Love us in this Love. As God, they Love you as a human! And as a human, we can Love them, others, and ourselves.

John 3:16-21 (NTE)

This, you see, is how much God loved (G25) the world: enough to give his only, special son, so that everyone who believes in him should not be lost but should share in the life of God’s new age. 17 After all, God didn’t send the son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world could be saved by him.

18 ‘Anyone who believes in him is not condemned. But anyone who doesn’t believe is condemned already, because they didn’t believe in the name of God’s only, special son. 19 And this is the condemnation: that light has come into the world, and people loved (G25) darkness rather than light, because what they were doing was evil. 20 For everyone who does evil hates the light; people like that don’t come to the light, in case their deeds get shown up and reproved. 21 But people who do the truth come to the light, so that it can become clear that what they have done has been done in God.’

[John 13:34-35](#) (NTE)

'I'm giving you a new commandment, and it's this: love (G25) one another! Just as I have loved (G25) you, so you must love (G25) one another. 35 This is how everybody will know that you are my disciples, if you have love (G26) for each other.'

[Romans 8:35-39](#) (NTE)

Who shall separate us from the Messiah's love (G26)? Suffering, or hardship, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or danger, or sword? 36 As the Bible says,

Because of you we are being killed all day long; we are regarded as sheep destined for slaughter.

37 No: in all these things we are completely victorious through the one who loved (G25) us. 38 I am persuaded, you see, that neither death nor life, nor angels nor rulers, nor the present, nor the future, nor powers, 39 nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature will be able to separate us from the love (G26) of God in King Jesus our Lord.

[Ephesians 2:4-7](#) (NTE)

But when it comes to mercy, God is rich! He had such great love (G26) for us that 5 he took us at the very point where we were dead through our offences, and made us alive together with the king (yes, you are saved by sheer grace!). 6 He raised us up with him, and made us sit with him – in the heavenly places, in King Jesus! 7 This was so that in the ages to come he could show just how unbelievably rich his grace is, the kindness he has shown us in King Jesus.

Question: Do you feel the Lord Loves you so much, that He is not holding anything against you?

Response:

- C. The Lord even provides us with a definition of what Agape Love looks like. And even the importance of this kind of Love in all our actions—because “good” actions without Love is just prideful (about self) or useless to me. A “clanging gong and clashing cymbal” being just a means to draw attention to oneself.

[1 Corinthians 13:1-8a](#) (NTE)

If I speak in human languages, or even in those of angels, but do not have love (G26), then I've become a clanging gong or else a clashing cymbal. 2 And if I should have prophetic gifts, and know all mysteries, all knowledge, too; have faith, to move the mountains, but have no love (G26)—I'm nothing. 3 If I give all my possessions to the poor, and, for pride's sake, my very body, but do not have love (G26), it's useless to me.

4 Love's (G26) great-hearted; love (G26) is kind, knows no jealousy, makes no fuss, is not puffed up, 5 no shameless ways, doesn't force its rightful claim, doesn't rage or bear a grudge, 6 doesn't cheer at others' harm, rejoices, rather, in the truth. 7 Love (G26) bears all things, believes all things, love (G26) hopes all things, endures all things. 8 Love (G26) never fails.

Question: Is this how you see the Lord's Love towards you?

Response:

- D. When we stay connected to the vine that is Christ Jesus, we bear much fruit. And one of these Fruits of the Spirit is this exact kind of Love He requires of us. Thus, He gives us of Himself to be able to Love as He Loves.

[Galatians 5:22-25](#) (NTE) [PoG]

But the fruit of the spirit is love ([G26](#)), joy, peace, great-heartedness, kindness, generosity, [faith], 23 gentleness, self-control. There is no law that opposes things like that! 24 And those who belong to the Messiah, Jesus, crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. 25 If we live by the spirit, let's line up with the spirit.

Question: How can you let His Love manifest more in your life towards others (and even yourself)?

Response:

- E. We can share in so many varieties of love; expressing it for brothers and sisters ([G5360](#)), our children and spouses ([G5362](#) and [G5388](#)), others we have affection/friendship ([G5368](#)) for, showing hospitality love to stranger ([G5381](#) and [G5382](#)), and even loving goodness ([G5358](#)). But it should never be a love of something or someone more than a person's love for the Lord.

[Matthew 10:32-39](#) (NTE)

'So: everyone who owns up in front of others to being on my side, I will own them before my father in heaven. 33 But anyone who disowns me in front of others, I will disown that person before my father in heaven.

34 'Don't think it's my job to bring peace on the earth. I didn't come to bring peace – I came to bring a sword! 35 I came to divide a man from his father, a daughter from her mother, and a daughter-in-law from her mother-in-law. 36 Yes, you'll find your enemies inside your own front door.

37 'If you love ([G5368](#)) your father or mother more than me, you don't deserve me. If you love ([G5368](#)) your son or daughter more than me, you don't deserve me. 38 Anyone who doesn't pick up their cross and follow after me doesn't deserve me. 39 If you find your life you'll lose it, and if you lose your life because of me you'll find it.

[Matthew 22:37-39](#) (NTE)

'You must love ([G25](#)) the Lord your God', replied Jesus, 'with all your heart, with all your life, and with all your mind. 38 This is the first commandment, and it's the one that really matters. 39 The second is similar, and it's this: You must love ([G25](#)) your neighbour as yourself.

[Titus 1:8](#) (NTE) [PoG]

[Elders] must be hospitable ([G5382](#)), a lover ([G5358](#)) of goodness, sensible, just, holy and self-controlled.

[Titus 2:4](#) (NTE) [PoG]

That way, [the elders] can give sensible instructions to the [the young] on how to love ([G5362](#)) their husbands and [love ([G5388](#))] their children.

[Hebrews 13:1-2](#) (NTE)

Let the family continue to care for one another. 2 Don't forget to be hospitable ([G5381](#)); by that means, some people have entertained angels without realizing it.

[2 Peter 1:3-8](#) (NTE)

God has bestowed upon us, through his divine power, everything that we need for life and godliness, through the knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and virtue. 4 The result is that he has given us, through these things, his precious and wonderful promises; and the purpose of all this is so that you may run away from the corruption of lust that is in the world, and may become partakers of the divine nature. 5 So, because of this, you should strain every nerve to supplement your faith with virtue, and your virtue with knowledge, 6 and your knowledge with self-control, and your self-control with patience, and your patience with piety, 7 and your piety with family affection ([G5360](#)), and your family affection ([G5360](#)) with love ([G26](#)). 8 If you have these things in plentiful supply, you see, you will not be wasting your time, or failing to bear fruit, in relation to your knowledge of our Lord Jesus the Messiah.

Question: Can you discern the different kinds of love in your life and those around you?

Response:

- F. We must be careful though with the Love we are capable. We can end up loving things that are not directed in a Godly manner—and even opposes God. This is the love of self ([G5367](#)), pleasure ([G5369](#)), and money ([G5365](#) and [G5366](#)) over loving ([G5377](#)) the Lord.

[1 Timothy 6:6-10](#) (NTE)

If it's gain you want, though, there is plenty to be had in godliness – if it's combined with contentment. 7 We brought nothing into the world, after all, and we certainly can't take anything out. 8 If we have food and clothing, we should be satisfied with it. 9 People who want to be rich, by contrast, fall into temptation and a trap, into many foolish and dangerous lusts which drown people in devastation and destruction. 10 The love ([G5365](#)) of money, you see, is the root of all evil. Some people have been so eager to get rich that they have wandered away from the faith and have impaled themselves painfully in several ways.

[2 Timothy 3:1-7](#) (NTE) [PoG]

You need to know this: bad times are coming in the last days. 2 People will be in love ([G5367](#)) with themselves, you see, and [lovers ([G5366](#)) of] money too. They will be boastful, arrogant, abusive, haters of parents, ungrateful, unholy, 3 unfeeling, implacable, accusing, dissolute, savage, haters of the good, 4 traitors, reckless, puffed up, lovers ([G5369](#)) of pleasure rather than lovers ([G5377](#)) of God, 5 holding on to a pattern of godliness but denying its power. Avoid people like that! 6 This group, you see, includes those who worm their way into people's houses and ensnare foolish women who are overwhelmed with their sins and are pulled and pushed by all kinds of desires, 7 always learning but never able to arrive at the truth.

Question: Can you see examples of this in the world today?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Luke 3:21-22](#) (NTE) [PoG]

So it happened that, as all the people were being baptized, Jesus too was baptized, and was praying. The heaven was opened, 22 and the holy spirit descended in a bodily form, like a dove, upon him. There came a voice from heaven: ‘You are my son, my dear [beloved ([G27](#))] son! I’m delighted with you.’

[1 John 3:1-3](#) (NTE)

Look at the remarkable love ([G26](#)) the father has given us – that we should be called God’s children! That indeed is what we are. That’s why the world doesn’t know us, because it didn’t know him. 2 Beloved ([G27](#)) ones, we are now, already, God’s children; it hasn’t yet been revealed what we are going to be. We know that when he is revealed we shall be like him, because we shall see him as he is. 3 All who have this hope in him make themselves pure, just as he is pure.

Thoughts: Just as Jesus was beloved by God the Father, so are we beloved just the same. We must never think less of ourselves or define who we are based on our actions or inactions. We are Loved by Him because we are His children.

V. CONCLUDING REMARKS / NOTES:

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

INTENTION:

Fruit comes naturally when connected to the source. He is our Vine, we are the branches from the Vine.

He supplies the nourishment for us to manifest His Fruit out from His Spirit in us.

All we need to do is stay connected and not hinder the source.

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the Fruit of the Spirit.

Simply put, this is a gift to and for us to use. As humans, we can strive so hard to live a religious “Law” life out of our own ability and strength. Yet, as believers, we have His power and ability to live a life out of His strength!

Let us discern that difference and use His Fruit. And remember, a tree does not strive to bear fruit, that comes naturally—the tree strives to have sun and water to survive. When we stay connected to the vine of Christ, God the Father takes care of us... cleaning us and lifting us up so that we DO bear much fruit. He’ll never cut us off.

II. READING: Bearing Fruit / Fruit of the Spirit

[John 15:1-17](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes} [PoG]

I am the true grapevine, and My Father is the farmer. 2 Every branch in Me not bearing fruit—{He lifts it up. That is, He lifts it up to the trellis in the spring, training and tending it so that it bears fruit next season}. And every branch bearing fruit—He cleans it in order that it may bear more fruit. 3 You are already clean, because of the word which I have spoken to you. 4 Abide {Remain, Continue, Stay} in Me, and I in you. Just as the branch is not able to bear fruit from itself unless it is abiding in the grapevine, so neither are you able unless you are abiding in Me. 5 I am the grapevine, you are the branches. The one abiding {that is, having a living reciprocal relationship with Jesus} in Me and I in him—this one bears much fruit. Because apart from Me, you can do nothing. 6 If anyone is not abiding in Me [*that is to not believe in Him, as in not being Born-Again*]*—he was thrown outside like the branch, and was dried-up. And they gather them together, and throw them into the fire. And they are burned.* 7 If you abide in Me [*that is to believe in Him, as in being Born-Again*], and My words abide in you, ask whatever you want, and it will be done for you. 8 By this My Father is glorified—that you be bearing much fruit, and be disciples to Me. 9 Just as the Father loved Me, I also loved you. Abide in My love. 10 If you keep My commandments, you [are abiding] in My love—just as I have kept the commandments of My Father and am abiding in His love.

11 “I have spoken these things to you in order that My joy may be in you, and your joy may be made full. 12 This is My commandment: that you be loving one another just as I loved you. 13 No one has greater love than this: that one lay-down his life for his friends. 14 You are My friends if you are doing the things which I command you. 15 I no longer call you slaves, because the slave does not know what his master is doing. But I have called you friends, because I made-known to you everything which I heard from My Father. 16 You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you, in order that you may go and bear fruit and your fruit may remain, in order that He may give you whatever thing you ask the Father in My name. 17 I am commanding these things to you so-that you will love one another.

[Galatians 5:22-25](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, [faith], 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such things there is no law. 24 And the ones of Christ Jesus crucified the flesh, with its passions and desires. 25 If we are living by the Spirit, let us also be walking-in-line with the Spirit.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. The Fruit of the Spirit is Love. This Love is a unique for of Love that applies to a Love only existing from the Lord. It is called Agape Love ([G25](#), [G26](#), and [G27](#)) that differs from a love that is of siblings ([G5360](#)), or self ([G5367](#)), or fondness ([G5368](#)), or friendship ([G5384](#))—as we learned in the previous Bible Study (Lesson 033). This unconditional Love is His Love towards us always. He so longs for us to operate in that Love, He provides the ability to do so from Himself. We are instructed to not only Love others with this Love, but also Love Him back with this same Love. We Love Him back because He first Loved us ([1 John 4:19](#)).

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



[Philippians 1:9-10](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes} [PoG]

And I am praying this: that your love may be abounding still more and more in knowledge and all perception 10 so that you may be approving the things mattering {being worth more, and thus, being excellent, superior, or essential}, in-order-that you might be pure and [not troubled by a consciousness of sin until] the day of Christ.

[1 John 4:7-8](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes}

Beloved, let us be loving one another. Because {this love} is from God! And everyone loving has been born from God, and knows God. 8 The one not loving did not know God, because God is love.

Question: Have you ever found yourself Agape Loving someone unconditionally without understanding how?

Response:

- B. The Fruit of the Spirit is Joy. The Lord Themselves have joy. They celebrate when a person comes into the Kingdom, or we manifest His Gifts, or even just because we are His children—we are the treasure He gave all He had (Jesus) to redeem us. And, I feel, when we understand that joy He has for us, it gives us strength—for the Lord’s joy to us is our strength ([Nehemiah 8:10](#)). This is how the Disciples (and us) can experience joy even in times of persecution.

[Matthew 13:44](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes}

“The kingdom of the heavens is like a treasure having been hidden in the field, which having found, a man hid. And from his joy {of it}, he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.”

[Acts 13:49-52](#) (DLNT)

And the word of the Lord was being carried through the whole region. 50 But the Jews incited the prominent worshipping women and the leading men of the city, and aroused a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out from their districts. 51 But the ones, having shaken-out the dust from their feet against them, went to Iconium. 52 And the disciples were being filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.

Question: Have you ever experienced joy in a time of trouble or doubt?

Response:

- C. The Fruit of the Spirit is Peace. Often our fear can be directed at God—that we literally fear Him in that He is out to punish us; because fear involves punishment ([1 John 4:18](#)). This is why He desires us to be at peace with Him as He has made peace with us ([Romans 5:1](#)). And when we see God correctly, we multiply that peace in us.

[James 3:17-18](#) (DLNT)

But the wisdom from-above is first pure, then peaceful, kind, yielding, full of mercy and good fruits, impartial, sincere. 18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace by the ones making peace.

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



[2 Peter 1:2](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

May grace and peace be multiplied to you in the [correct] knowledge of God and Jesus our Lord.

Question: When you learn about God, does it bring peace to you?

Response:

- D. The Fruit of the Spirit is Patience. The Lord is patient with us, longing for us to come to salvation ([2 Peter 3:9](#)). Jesus had to be patient as He experienced struggles as a human (relating to us). In some Bible translations, this word is called: longsuffering ([G3115](#)); but it doesn't mean to suffer for a long time, but to have patient endurance, slow to avenge wrongs. When we struggle, He is there to bear the fruit through us of patience.

[2 Corinthians 6:4-10](#) (DLNT)

... but in everything, as God's servants, commending ourselves in great endurance— in afflictions, in constraints, in distresses, 5 in beatings, in prisons, in disturbances, in labours, in watchings, in fastings; 6 in purity, in knowledge, in patience, in kindness, in a holy spirit, in sincere love, 7 in the word of truth, in the power of God; through the weapons of righteousness for the right hand and the left; 8 through glory and dishonour, through evil-report and good-report; as deceivers and true ones, 9 as being not-known and being fully-known; as dying and behold we live, as being disciplined and not being put-to-death, 10 as being grieved but always rejoicing; as poor but enriching many, as having nothing and holding-on-to all things

[Colossians 1:9-14](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

For this reason we also, from which day we heard, do not cease praying for you and asking that you may be filled with the [correct] knowledge of His will in all spiritual wisdom and understanding, 10 so that you may walk worthily of the Lord, toward total pleasing (of Him)—bearing-fruit in every good work and growing in the knowledge of God; 11 being empowered with all power according-to the might of His glory, toward total endurance and patience; with joy 12 giving-thanks to the Father having qualified you for your part of the share of the saints in the light, 13 Who delivered us out of the authority of darkness and transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of His love, 14 in Whom we have the redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

Question: Do you find it hard to hold back on "getting back" at someone who wronged you?

Response:

- E. The Fruit of the Spirit is Kindness. It is this goodness (kindness) of God that leads us to repentance ([Romans 2:4](#)). He continues to show His Kindness to us as we too can do the same.

[Ephesians 2:4-7](#) (DLNT)

But God, being rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, 5 even we being dead in trespasses, made-us-alive-with Christ—by grace you are saved— 6 and raised-us-with Him and seated-us-with

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



Him in the heavenly-places in Christ Jesus, 7 in order that He might demonstrate in the coming ages the surpassing riches of His grace in His kindness toward us in Christ Jesus.

[Colossians 3:8-17](#) (DLNT)

But now you also, lay-aside all these things—wrath, anger, malice, blasphemy, filthy-language from your mouth; 9 do not be lying to one another—having stripped-off the old person with his practices, 10 and having put-on the new person being renewed to knowledge in-accordance-with the image of the One having created him, 11 where there is no Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, free, but Christ is all things and in all persons.

12 Therefore, as chosen ones of God, holy and having been loved, put-on deep-feelings of compassion, kindness, humble-mindedness, gentleness, patience, 13 bearing-with one another, and forgiving each other—if anyone has a complaint against anyone. Just as indeed the Lord forgave you, so also you forgive. 14 And over all these things put on love, which is the bond of perfection. 15 And let the peace of Christ be arbitrating in your hearts—into which indeed you were called in one body. And be thankful. 16 Let the word of Christ be dwelling in you richly, with all wisdom teaching and admonishing each other with psalms, hymns, spiritual songs; with gratitude singing with your hearts to God. 17 And everything, whatever thing you may do in word or in deed, do all things in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving-thanks to God the Father through Him.

Question: If we always did the same kindness as the Lord, do you think the world now would be different?

Response:

- F. The Fruit of the Spirit is Goodness. The first Bible Study lesson (001) is that of the Nature and Character of God being “Good”. We must never forget this.

[Romans 15:13-14](#) (DLNT)

Now may the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, so that you may be abounding in hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.

14 Now I am convinced, my brothers—even I myself concerning you—that you yourselves also are full of goodness, having been filled with all knowledge, being able also to admonish one another.

[James 1:16b-19](#) (DLNT)

My beloved brothers, 17 every good gift-giving and every perfect gift-given is from-above, coming down from the Father of lights, with Whom there is no variation or shadow of turning. 18 Having willed it, He brought us forth by the word of truth so that we might be a kind-of firstfruit of His creatures. 19 You know this, my beloved brothers, but let every person be quick to listen, slow to speak, slow into anger.

Question: Do you see yourself as being full of goodness?

Response:

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



G. The Fruit of the Spirit is Faith. Faith is not what we demonstrate toward God (doing for Him to "move"), it's actually what God is doing through you. God manifested Himself through Jesus Christ ([Hebrews 12:2](#)), and it was credited to Jesus as Faith. Jesus demonstrated this for us and gifted us the exact same ability to do so as well. Thus, the manifestation of God in your life is literally Faith—being assured of a positive hope and proof of something we do not see going into it (becoming reality as the conclusion becomes visible).

i.e.: When the Lord has us approach a person who requires the healing of a crippled hand (as Jesus did), we go into the situation with assurance, of a positive hope that it will be healed, certain of the proof that it will, even though we won't see it until it happens.

[Hebrews 11:1](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes}

Now faith is the assurance {That is, our subjective confidence about the future things. Or, substance, reality; that is, the objective present reality of the future things} of things being hoped-for {That is, future realities}, the conviction {Or, the certainty, the being-convinced. Or, the proof, the evidence, the thing-convincing} of things not being seen {That is, unseen realities, past, present, and future}.

Question: What manifests as Faith in your life?

Response:

H. The Fruit of the Spirit is Gentleness. There is no gentleness in coming at someone with a rod to beat them, but of a shepherd's staff that gently guides in love and patience. This gentle shepherd's staff is what is told to us to use ([Proverbs 13:24](#))... <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2017/05/raising-children-as-lord-raises-us.html>

[1 Corinthians 4:14-21](#) (DLNT)

I am writing these things not shaming you, but admonishing you as my beloved children. 15 For if you should have ten-thousand tutors in Christ, yet you do not have many fathers. For I fathered you in Christ Jesus through the good-news. 16 Therefore I exhort you—be imitators of me. 17 For this reason I sent Timothy to you, who is my beloved and faithful child in the Lord, who will remind you as to my ways in Christ Jesus, just as I am teaching everywhere in every church. 18 Now some were puffed-up as-if I were not coming to you. 19 But I will come to you soon, if the Lord wills. And I shall come-to-know not the talk of the ones having been puffed-up, but the power. 20 For the kingdom of God is not in talk, but in power. 21 What do you want? Should I come to you with a rod, or with love and a spirit of gentleness?

Question: How do you approach someone to help guide or correct them?

Response:

I. The Fruit of the Spirit is Self-Control. Self-control involves strength. However, we must be cautious as our flesh desires to be the "strong one". Yet, here we are gifted a strength above and beyond our flesh—one from the

Spirit within us that dwelt in Jesus Christ; who was obedient even unto death ([Philippians 2:8](#)). His flesh wanted to quit, but He maintained self-control to adhere to God's Will over His own flesh ([Matthew 26:36-46](#)).

[Titus 1:7-9](#) (DLNT)

For the overseer must be blameless as God's steward, not self-willed, not quick-tempered, not a drunken one, not a brawler, not fond-of-shameful-gain, 8 but hospitable, a lover-of-good, sound-minded, just, holy, self-controlled, 9 holding-on-to the faithful word in accordance with the teaching, so that he may be able both to exhort with healthy teaching and refute the ones contradicting.

[2 Peter 1:3-9](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

Because-of His divine power having granted us all things pertaining-to life and godliness through the knowledge of the One having called us by His own glory and virtue, 4 through which qualities He has granted us the precious and greatest things-promised in order that through these you might become sharers of the divine nature, having escaped-from the corruption in the world by evil desire; 5 and indeed for this very reason you having applied all diligence—in your faith supply virtue; and in your virtue, knowledge; 6 and in your knowledge, self-control; and in your self-control, endurance; and in your endurance, godliness; 7 and in your godliness, brotherly-love; and in your brotherly-love, love.

8 For these qualities being-present in you and increasing make you neither useless nor unfruitful in the [correct] knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 For the one in whom these qualities are not present is blind, being short-sighted, having forgotten the purification of his former sins.

Question: What are signs we are relying on the self-control of the flesh versus the Spirit?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Luke 8:11-15](#) (DLNT)

Now the parable means this: the seed is the word of God. 12 And the people along the road are the ones having heard. Then the devil comes and takes away the word from their heart in order that they may not be saved, having believed. 13 And the people on the bed-rock are ones who are welcoming the word with joy when they hear it. And these do not have a root—they are ones who are believing for a time, and are departing in a time of testing. 14 And the seed having fallen into the thorns—these people are the ones having heard, and while proceeding are being choked by the anxieties and riches and pleasures of life. And they are not bringing-fruit-to-maturity. 15 And the seed in the good soil—these people are ones who, having heard the word in a good and fertile heart, are holding-on-to it and bearing-fruit with endurance.

Thoughts: Not having the fruit does not make you any less a Christian (or not a Born-Again believer). Out of the four seed examples, only the first one (along the road) are those who hear the Word of God and choose not to believe and are thus not Born-Again. The other three heard the Word and believed, being Born-Again. Of these three, one doesn't bear fruit (but remains a believer), the second shows some fruit (also remaining a believer). The last bears full amounts of ripe fruit (as a believer). As such, it is possible to believe, be Born-Again, and not show fruit.

GIFTS

INTENTION:

We have all been given the same Holy Spirit—as such, we have all been given the same Gifts.
Let us freely give and use those Gifts, as they are provided without debt (hence why it is called a gift).

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Gifts.

These Gifts from the Lord are not something you earn, but something you deserve—not because of your merit, but because of His Love to you as His Child. Just as He called Jesus His Son, so are you. And just as Jesus was freely given all these Gifts, so are you.

You are fully given the ability to operate in each and every one of these Gifts at any one time, multiple times, or together at times. This is what Jesus and the Disciples demonstrated for us. So, even though you may find yourself more comfortable or confident in a specific Gift (“in season”), you must not restrict the Lord’s Work in you to operate in any of the other Gifts (“out of season”)—[2 Timothy 4:2](#).

With these Gifts, remember, the greatest of these Gifts is the Lord’s Agape Love. As being the greatest, though, it does not discount or make any of the other Gifts irrelevant or discontinued. It says we must operate in all the gifts through the gift of Agape Love—that without performing these Gifts through Love, we are only calling attention to ourselves, not to the Lord. Hence how “a noisy gong or clanging cymbal” tries to make people pay attention to you, not the Gift from the Lord.

Let us not hide these Gifts or discount them, for they are a Testimony of and to the Lord!

The verses following are an overview of where we read about the Gifts, not looking in depth at what each Gift is, but looking at how Jesus and others operated in these Gifts to demonstrate for us that we too operate in them.

We are first going to look at that greatest Gift being Love, but also read about all the other Gifts given with verses that show both Jesus and others operating in these Gifts.

II. READING: [1 Corinthians 13:1-13](#) (EXB)

I may speak in ·different languages [tongues] of people or even angels. But if I do not have love, I am only a ·noisy [resounding] ·bell [gong] or a ·crashing [clanging] cymbal. 2 I may have the gift of prophecy. I may understand all ·the secret things of God [mysteries] and have all knowledge, and I may have faith so great I can move mountains. But even with all these things, if I do not have love, then I am nothing. 3 I may give away everything I have, and I may even give my body ·as an offering to be burned [to be burned]. But I gain nothing if I do not have love.

4 Love is patient and kind. Love is not ·jealous [envious], it does not brag, and it is not ·proud [arrogant; conceited; puffed up]. 5 Love is not ·rude [disrespectful], is not ·selfish [self-serving], and ·does not get upset with others [is not easily provoked/angered]. Love does not ·count up [keep a record of] wrongs that have been done. 6 Love ·takes no pleasure [does not rejoice] in ·evil [wrongdoing; injustice] but rejoices over the truth. 7 Love ·patiently accepts all things [bears all things; or always protects], ·always trusts [believes all things], ·always hopes [hopes all things], and ·always endures [endures all things].

8 Love never ·ends [fails; falls short]. There are gifts of prophecy, but they will ·be ended [cease; pass away]. There are gifts of ·speaking in different languages [or ecstatic utterance; tongues], but those gifts will ·stop [cease; fall silent]. There is the gift of knowledge, but it will ·come to an end [pass away; be set aside]. 9 ·The reason is that [For] ·our knowledge and our ability to prophesy are not perfect [we know in part/imperfectly and we prophesy in part/incompletely]. 10 But when ·perfection [the perfect; completeness; wholeness] comes, the ·things that are not perfect [partial] will ·end [pass away; be set aside]. 11 When I was a child, I talked like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child. When I became a man, I ·stopped [set aside] those childish ways. 12 ·It is the same with us [For...]. Now we see ·a dim reflection [obscurely; or indirectly], ·as if we were looking into a mirror [through a glass darkly], but then we shall see ·clearly [face to face]. Now I know only a part, but then I will know fully, as ·God has known me [I am fully known]. 13 So these three things ·continue forever [endure; remain]: faith, hope, and love. And the greatest of these is love.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. For by “God’s Grace” and “Christ’s Faith” we are saved—for they are Gifts to us ([Ephesians 2:4-10](#)). These Grace and Faith Gifts are the beginning of our Salvation; for without them, we have no hope for salvation. Yet, the Gifts do not stop there, but continue because of God’s ongoing Grace. And Christ’s “one Faith” is what we all have been given—this is the “amount of faith” we’ve been given.

[Romans 12:3-8](#) (EXB)

Because God has given me a special gift [his grace], I have something to say to everyone among you. Do not think you are better than you are. [Instead] You must decide what you really are [think sensibly; think with sober discernment] by [based on; in accordance with] the amount of faith God has given you. 4 [For just as] Each one of us has a [one] body with many parts, and these parts all have different uses [functions]. 5 In the same way, we are many, but in Christ we are all one body, and each part belongs to all the other parts [members]. 6 We all have different gifts, each of which came because of the grace God gave us. The person who has the gift of prophecy should use that gift in agreement with the faith [or in proportion to their faith]. 7 Anyone who has the gift of serving should serve. Anyone who has the gift of teaching should teach. 8 Whoever has the gift of encouraging [exhorting] others should encourage [exhort]. Whoever has the gift of giving to others should give freely [generously]. Anyone who has the gift of being a leader should try hard when he leads [lead diligently/enthusiastically]. Whoever has the gift of showing mercy to others should do so with joy [cheerfulness].

i. [Matthew 4:23-25](#) (EXB)

Jesus went everywhere in Galilee, teaching in the synagogues, preaching the Good News about [Gospel of] the kingdom, and healing all [or every kind of] the people’s diseases and sicknesses. 24 The news [fame] about Jesus spread all over [or as far as] Syria, and people brought all the sick to him. They were suffering from different kinds of diseases. Some were in great pain, some had demons [were demon-possessed], some were epileptics, and some were paralyzed. Jesus healed all of them. 25 Many people [Great crowds] from Galilee, the Ten Towns [Decapolis; *the area east of Lake Galilee that once had ten main towns*], Jerusalem, Judea, and the land across [beyond] the Jordan River followed him.

ii. [Acts 20:22-28](#) (EXB)

But now [indeed; behold] I must obey the Holy Spirit and [bound/compelled by the Spirit, I must] go to Jerusalem. I don’t know what will happen to me there. 23 I know only that in every city the Holy Spirit tells [warns; testifies to] me that troubles and even jail [chains and persecutions/afflictions] wait for me. 24 [But] I don’t care about my own life [consider my life worth anything]. The most important thing [or My only goal] is that I complete [finish] my mission [task; course; race; [2 Timothy 4:7](#); [Hebrews 12:1](#)], the work [ministry; service] that the Lord Jesus gave me [I received from the Lord Jesus]—to tell people [testify/witness to] the Good News [Gospel] about God’s grace.

25 “And now [look; behold], I know that none of you among whom I was preaching [proclaiming] the kingdom of God [kingdom] will ever see me [my face] again. 26 So today I tell [testify/witness to] you that if any of you should be lost, I am not responsible [I am innocent/clean of the blood of everyone; [Ezekiel 33:9](#)], 27 because I have told [have not held back from telling] you everything God wants you to know [or the whole purpose/plan/will of God]. 28 Be careful for [Keep watch over] yourselves and for all the people [flock] the Holy Spirit has given to you to oversee [made you overseers/guardians; [John 21:16](#)]. You must be like shepherds to the church of God, which he bought [or obtained] with the death of his own Son [with the blood of his own (Son); or with his own blood].

iii. [Ephesians 4:1-6](#) (EXB)

[Therefore,] As a prisoner ·for [because I belong to; or in] the Lord, I urge you to ·live [walk] in a manner worthy of the calling ·you have received [to which you were called]. 2 ·Always be [or Be completely] humble, gentle, and patient, ·accepting [putting up/bearing with] each other in love. 3 Make every effort to preserve the unity ·of [provided by; available through] the Spirit ·in [through] the ·peace that joins us together [bond of peace]. 4 There is one body and one Spirit, and God called you to ·have one hope [one hope of your calling]. 5 There is one Lord, one faith, and one baptism. 6 There is one God and Father of everything. ·He rules everything and is everywhere and is in everything [...who is over all and through all and in all].

iv. [Hebrews 3:12-14](#) (EXB)

So brothers and sisters, ·be careful [see to it] that none of you has an evil, unbelieving heart that will ·turn you away from [desert; forsake] the living God. 13 But encourage each other every day while it is “today” [*meaning the time of opportunity to be saved*]. ·Help [Encourage] each other so none of you will become hardened ·because sin has tricked you [by sin’s deception]. 14 [For] We all ·share in [or have become partners with] Christ if [indeed; in fact] we ·keep [hold firm] till the end the sure ·faith [conviction; confidence] we had in the beginning.

Question: Which do you function in?

Response:

- B. Though we can all operate in each and every Gift at any given time, we as humans tend to be more comfortable operating in the Gifts we find we have confidence in. As such, the Lord takes this into account and treats each of us as parts of a whole. Each strength we have that differs from someone else makes us a unique part of the “Body of Christ” giving us all the Gifts through the entire Body of believers. This is the meaning behind “not all” being a specific Gift-operator. This too, that each of us grow and mature in Christ differently as someone else—thus one person’s Gift-strength may be developed more than another; yet, make a whole.

[1 Corinthians 12:1-11; 27-31](#) (EXB)

Now, brothers and sisters, I don’t want you to ·misunderstand [be uninformed] ·about [concerning; or in regard to your question about] spiritual gifts. 2 You know the way you lived ·before you were believers [when you were pagans/Gentiles]. You let yourselves be influenced and led away to worship idols—things that could not speak. 3 So I want you to understand that no one who is speaking ·with the help of [by means of; in the power of] God’s Spirit says, “Jesus be cursed.” And no one can say, “Jesus is Lord,” ·without the help of [except by means of/in the power of] the Holy Spirit.

4 There are different kinds of gifts, but they are all from the same Spirit. 5 There are different ·ways to serve [ministries] but the same Lord to serve. 6 And there are different ·ways that God works through people [kinds of action; activities] but the same God works ·in all of us in everything we do [all things in all people]. 7 ·Something from the Spirit can be seen in [The manifestation/disclosure of the Spirit is given to] each person, for the common good. 8 The Spirit gives one person the ·ability to speak with wisdom [message/word of wisdom], and the same Spirit gives another the ·ability to speak with knowledge [message/word of knowledge]. 9 The same Spirit gives faith to one person. And, to another, that one Spirit gives gifts of healing. 10 The Spirit gives to another person ·the power to do miracles [works of power], to another ·the ability to prophesy [prophecy]. And he gives to

another the ability to know the difference between good and evil [discernment/distinguishing of] spirits. The Spirit gives one person the ability to speak in different kinds of languages [or ecstatic utterance; tongues] and to another the ability to interpret those languages [interpretation of tongues]. 11 One Spirit, the same Spirit, does all these things, and the Spirit decides what to give [distributes just as he wishes to] each person.

27 Together you [You; *the Greek is plural*] are the body of Christ, and each one of you is a part of that body. 28 In the church God has given a place first to [appointed/placed first] apostles, second to prophets, and third to teachers, then those who do miracles [acts of powers], those who have gifts of healing, those who can help others, those who are able to govern [lead], and those who can speak in different languages [or with ecstatic utterance; different kinds of tongues]. 29 Not all are apostles [Not all are apostles, are they? (*vv. 29–30 are all rhetorical questions assuming a negative answer*)]. Not all are prophets. Not all are teachers. Not all do miracles. 30 Not all have gifts of healing. Not all speak in different languages [or with ecstatic utterance; in tongues]. Not all interpret those languages [tongues]. 31 But you should truly want to have [eagerly desire; be zealous for] the greater gifts.

i. [John 6:12-14](#) (EXB)

When they had all had enough to eat [were filled/satisfied], Jesus said to his followers [disciples], “Gather the leftover pieces of fish and bread [pieces] so that nothing is wasted.” 13 So they gathered up the pieces and filled twelve baskets with the pieces left from the five barley loaves [[2 Kings 4:42–44](#); *Jesus’ miracle surpasses that of Elisha*].

14 When the people saw this miracle [sign] that Jesus did, they said, “He must truly be the Prophet [probably the “prophet like Moses” of [Deuteronomy 18:15–18](#)] who is coming into the world.”

ii. [Acts 4:8-10](#) (EXB)

Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them, “Rulers of the people and you elders, 9 are you questioning [examining] us [today] about a good thing [good deed; act of kindness] that was done to a crippled [lame; sick] man? Are you asking us who made him well [or how he was made well/healed]? 10 We want all of you and all the people [of Israel] to know that this man was made well by the power [in/by the name] of Jesus Christ from Nazareth [or the Nazarene]. You crucified him, but God raised him from the dead. This man was crippled [lame; sick], but he is now well [healthy] and able to stand here before you because of the power [name] of Jesus.

iii. [1 Corinthians 14:13-19](#) (EXB)

[Therefore] The one who has the gift of speaking in a different language [or ecstatic utterance; tongues] should pray for the gift to interpret what is spoken. 14 If I pray in a different language [or with ecstatic utterance; in a tongue], my spirit is praying, but my mind does nothing [is unfruitful]. 15 So what should I do? I will pray with my spirit, but I will also pray with my mind. I will sing [sing praises/psalms] with my spirit, but I will also sing [sing praises/psalms] with my mind. 16 [Otherwise] If you praise God [or pronounce a blessing] with your spirit, those persons there without understanding [or without the gift; or who are inquirers/seekers] cannot say “Amen” [*from a Hebrew term meaning “it is true”*; [1 Chronicles 16:36](#)] to your prayer of thanks, because they do not know what you are saying. 17 You may be thanking God in a good way [well enough], but the other person is not helped [edified; built up].

18 I thank God that I speak in different kinds of languages [or with ecstatic utterance; in tongues] more than all of you. 19 But in the church meetings I would rather speak five words I understand [with my mind] in order to teach others than thousands of words in a different language [or with ecstatic utterance; in a tongue].

Question: What do you believe about this?

Response:

- C. As we also see, Jesus was first an Apostle, but also operated as a prophet (speaking of the grace to come), evangelist (spreading this grace message around), pastor/shepherd (guiding His Disciples and others), and a teacher (educating and demonstrating to others the way Father God Works). Furthermore, we see His Disciples and Paul working in many of these as well—Paul being an Apostle to the Gentiles as well as a teacher. And these Gifts were given to both men and women ([Romans 16:7](#)) as there is neither male nor female in Christ and the same Spirit works with and in all who believe.

[Ephesians 4:7-13](#) (EXB)

Each one of us has been given the special gift of grace [grace; or gift], showing how generous Christ is [or in proportion to Christ's gift; according to the measure of Christ's gift]. 8 That is why it says in the Scriptures,

“When he went up [ascended] to the heights, he led a parade of captives [or took captives into captivity], and he gave gifts to people [[Psalms 68:18](#)].”

9 When it says, “He went up [ascended],” what does it mean? It means [...except] that he first came down [descended] to the earth [or lower regions, namely the earth; or the depths of the earth; (*probably refers to: 1. the Incarnation, though possibly, 2. Christ's descent to Hades after his death ([1 Peter 3:19–20](#)), or 3. Christ's descent through the Spirit at Pentecost ([Acts 2](#))*)]. 10 So the one who came down [descended] is the same one who went up [ascended] above all the heavens. Christ did that [...in order] to fill everything with his presence [all things]. 11 And Christ gave gifts to people—he made some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to go and tell the Good News, and some to have the work of caring for and teaching God's people [he himself gave apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors/shepherds, and teachers]. 12 Christ gave those gifts to prepare [...to equip] God's holy people for the work of serving, to make the body of Christ stronger. 13 This work must continue until we are all joined together in the same faith [or all reach unity in the faith] and in the same knowledge of the Son of God. We must become like a mature person [or the perfect Man; Christ], growing until we become like Christ and have his perfection [to the measure of the stature of Christ's fullness].

i. [Hebrews 3:1-6](#) (EXB)

So all of you [Therefore] holy brothers and sisters, who were called by God [are partners/partakers in a heavenly calling], think about [consider; focus on] Jesus, who was sent to us [or is our apostle; a commissioned messenger] and is the high priest of our faith [or whom we acknowledge/confess; of our confession]. 2 Jesus was faithful to God who appointed him just as Moses was faithful in God's family [household; house]. 3 Jesus has [deserves; is worthy of] more honour than Moses, just as the builder of a house has more honour than the house itself. 4 [For] Every house is built by someone, but the builder of everything is God himself. 5 Moses was faithful in God's family [all of God's house; [Numbers 12:7](#)] as a servant, and he told [testified to] what God would say in the future. 6 But Christ is faithful as a Son over God's house. And we are God's house if we confidently maintain our hope [or maintain our courage and confident hope].

ii. [2 Timothy 1:1,11](#) (EXB)

From Paul, an apostle [messenger] of Christ Jesus by the will of God. God sent me to tell about [...according to] the promise of life that is in Christ Jesus.

I was chosen [appointed] to tell that Good News [a preacher/herald] and to be an apostle and a teacher.

iii. [Revelations 1:1-3](#) (EXB)

This is the revelation of Jesus Christ [about Jesus Christ; or given by Jesus Christ; *the author could be intentionally ambiguous*], which God gave to him, to show his servants what must soon [quickly] happen. And Jesus sent his angel to show it [make it known] to his servant John, 2 who has told [witnessed; testified to] everything he has seen. It is the word of God; it is the message [witness; testimony] from Jesus Christ. 3 Blessed [Happy] is the one who reads the words of God's message [the prophecy], and blessed [happy] are the people who hear this message and do [keep; obey] what is written in it [*the context envisioned is a leader reading to a congregation*]. The time is near when all of this will happen [For the time is near].

Question: For those you know who operate with the Gifts of apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors/shepherds, and teachers... do they make you strong, unified, and mature; or do they make you feel worse about yourself?

Response:

- D. Once again, we are told that Love is the most important Gift. And thus, Speaking and Ministering will always edify the Body of Christ and Glorify God. We have to remember that it is the "correct knowledge" of the Lord that multiplies "grace and peace" ([2 Peter 1:2](#)).

[1 Peter 4:7-11](#) (EXB)

The time is near when all things will end [end of all things is near]. So think clearly [be serious/alert] and control [discipline] yourselves so you will be able to pray. 8 Most importantly, love each other deeply [earnestly], because love will cause people to forgive each other for many sins [covers a multitude of sins; [Proverbs 10:12](#); [Luke 7:46-47](#)]. 9 Open your homes [Be hospitable] to each other, without complaining [grumbling]. 10 Each of you has received a gift to use to serve others. Be good servants [stewards; managers] of God's various gifts of grace [[Romans 5:15-16](#); [6:23](#)]. 11 Anyone who speaks should speak words from God [or oracles from God; or as one bringing God's message]. Anyone who serves should serve with the strength God gives so that in everything God will be praised [glorified] through Jesus Christ. Glory and power belong to him forever and ever [[Colossians 3:17](#)]. Amen.

i. [Matthew 10:19-20](#) (EXB)

When you are arrested, don't worry about what to say or how to say it. [For] At that time you will be given the things to say. 20 It will not really be you speaking but the Spirit of your Father speaking through [in] you.

ii. [Acts 4:31](#) (EXB)

After they had prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. They were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spoke God's word [message] without fear [with boldness/confidence/courage].

iii. [Hebrews 6:9-11](#) (EXB)

·Dear friends [Loved ones; Beloved], we are saying this to you, but we ·really expect [are convinced/confident of] better things from you that ·will lead to [or accompany; come with] your salvation. 10 [For] God is ·fair [not unjust]; he will not forget the work you did and the love you showed ·for him [in his name] by ·helping [serving] his ·people [holy people; saints]. And he will remember that you are still ·helping [serving] them. 11 We ·want [desire for] each of you to ·go on with the same hard work [demonstrate the same zeal/diligence] ·all your lives [until the end] ·so you will surely get what you hope for [or until your hope is fulfilled/attained].

Question: What is a message the Lord wants you to share now?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [James 1:17-18;22-25](#) (EXB)

Every good ·action [or act of giving] and every perfect gift ·is from God [comes from above]. These good gifts come down from the ·Creator of the sun, moon, and stars [the father of lights; referring to God’s creation of the heavenly bodies ([Genesis 1:14-19](#); [Psalms 136:7-9](#); [Jeremiah 31:35](#))], who does not change like their shifting shadows. 18 God ·decided [chose; willed] to give us ·life [birth] through the ·word of truth [true message] so we might be ·the most important [or the first of many; a kind of firstfruits; *firstfruits were the first crops to be harvested and guaranteed the coming harvest*; [Exodus 34:22](#); [2 Thessalonians 2:13](#); [Revelations 14:4](#)] of all ·the things he made [or his creatures].

22 ·Do what God’s teaching says; when you only listen and do nothing, you are fooling yourselves [Be doers of the word, and not only hearers, deceiving yourselves; [Luke 11:28](#); [Romans 2:13](#)]. 23 Those who hear God’s ·teaching [word] and do nothing are like people who look at ·themselves [their natural face; the face of their birth] in a mirror. 24 [For] They ·see their faces [gaze at themselves] and then go away and quickly forget what they looked like. 25 But ·the truly happy people are [blessed are] those who ·carefully study [look intently into; stoop down to look at] God’s perfect law that makes people free [*probably refers to the law of Moses as it is fulfilled in Christ*], and they ·continue to study it [persevere in it]. ·They do not forget what they heard, but they obey what God’s teaching says [not being a forgetful hearer but an active doer]. Those who do this will be ·made happy [blessed].

Thoughts: Not only are all these Gifts good and perfect from God, they are to be used—made manifest in your life. For keeping them at bay means you are not being a “doer”. Let’s be doers and demonstrating ourselves as members of the Body of Christ.

ARMOUR OF GOD

INTENTION:

We must recognise that as we live on this earth, things are going to try and “steal, kill, or destroy”. It is a battle out there in the world, but also in our Spirit, Heart, Soul, Mind, and Body.

Let us “dress for battle” all the time. There is no reason to ever take off His Armour!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the Armour of God.

Unlike Saul putting his armour on a young to-be-king David ([1 Samuel 17:38-40](#)), the Armour of God is specifically designed and created to fit us comfortably and with every piece fitting as it should. When we feel comfortable in what we wear, we become confident in doing what we do. This is as David saying that he wasn't comfortable in Saul's armour, but was comfortable in how he had done battle before—with a staff, shepherd's bag, and sling. And it was wearing what he was accustomed to that he slew the giant, Goliath, before him ([1 Samuel 17:45-51](#)).

Does that mean David went into every battle without armour? No. He developed his own armour that fit him for the right battle and weapons used. The Lord trained him for each battle, for each weapon, and armour used ([Psalms 18](#)).

What armour are you wearing?

Even if the armour doesn't fit or protect as it should, sometimes we get used to it...that is our flesh and its perceived strength or protection. We think we can handle the battle and the attack in our own ability by what we ourselves have built around us—relying maybe on money, career, position, status, fame, a vice, or even people we have surrounded ourselves with. They may hold up for a while, even deceiving us in the process; but they will never compare to what the Lord can and does provide you. You just have to put on HIS Armour (an instruction to us to do).

This Armour is the same as He Himself wears, designed to specifically fit you, no matter what size, stature, ability, age, gender, denomination, etc. You actually get what works for God! Let's read... and break down each piece of it.

II. READING: [Ephesians 6:1-20](#) (NIV)

Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. 11 Put on the full Armour of God, so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. 12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. 13 Therefore put on the full Armour of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. 14 Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, 15 and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. 16 In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the Lord's people. 19 Pray also for me, that whenever I speak, words may be given me so that I will fearlessly make known the mystery of the gospel, 20 for which I am an ambassador in chains. Pray that I may declare it fearlessly, as I should.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. The "Belt of Truth". This is something we have talked about in the context of having the "correct knowledge" of God. Anything other than that is not the full Truth. The first Truth and most valuable Truth is that of Jesus Christ. When we hold onto this correct truth, our whole Armour stays in place with this belt, resting properly, distributing the weight of the full armour that it does not feel as a burden—it feels freeing ([John 8:32](#)).

[John 1:14-18](#) (NIV)

The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the one and only Son, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.

15 (John testified concerning him. He cried out, saying, “This is the one I spoke about when I said, ‘He who comes after me has surpassed me because he was before me.’”) 16 Out of his fullness we have all received grace in place of grace already given. 17 For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. 18 No one has ever seen God, but the one and only Son, who is himself God and is in closest relationship with the Father, has made him known.

[1 Thessalonians 2:13](#) (NIV)

And we also thank God continually because, when you received the word of God, which you heard from us, you accepted it not as a human word, but as it actually is, the word of God, which is indeed at work in you who believe.

[1 Timothy 2:3-7](#) (NIV)

This is good, and pleases God our Saviour, 4 who wants all people to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth. 5 For there is one God and one mediator between God and mankind, the man Christ Jesus, 6 who gave himself as a ransom for all people. This has now been witnessed to at the proper time. 7 And for this purpose I was appointed a herald and an apostle—I am telling the truth, I am not lying—and a true and faithful teacher of the Gentiles.

Question: What is the Truth to you... what do you hold as True when it comes to the Lord?

Response:

- B. The “Breastplate of Righteousness”. As we have learned before in another Bible Lesson, Righteousness is not what we do or don’t do, it is a state of being—a title given to us (inherited from Him) upon believing in Christ Jesus. When we have this ingrained surety that we cannot gain or lose our Right-Standing with God, we can face the battle with confidence. That even if we make a mistake, our Righteousness is not in jeopardy; nor can anyone convince us that it is at risk (whether the Devil or our own Flesh). That is, this Breastplate guards our heart that might “condemn us” ([1 John 3:20-21](#)) or tries to keep us from having a clear conscience “not troubled by a consciousness of sin” ([Acts 24:16](#)). When it is guarded in Righteousness, we find life and health for our body.

[Proverbs 4:20-23](#) (NIV)

20 My son, pay attention to what I say; turn your ear to my words.
21 Do not let them out of your sight, keep them within your heart;
22 for they are life to those who find them and health to one’s whole body.
23 Above all else, guard your heart, for everything you do flows from it.

[Matthew 6:19-21; 28-34](#) (NIV)

“Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moths and vermin destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. 20 But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moths and vermin do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. 21 For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.”

“And why do you worry about clothes? See how the flowers of the field grow. They do not labour or spin. 29 Yet I tell you that not even Solomon in all his splendour was dressed like one of these. 30 If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the fire, will he not much more clothe you—you of little faith? 31 So do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall

we wear?’ 32 For the pagans run after all these things, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them. 33 But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well. 34 Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about itself. Each day has enough trouble of its own.”

[Romans 5:17-21](#) (NIV)

For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive God’s abundant provision of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ!

18 Consequently, just as one trespass resulted in condemnation for all people, so also one righteous act resulted in justification and life for all people. 19 For just as through the disobedience of the one man the many were made sinners, so also through the obedience of the one man the many will be made righteous.

20 The law was brought in so that the trespass might increase. But where sin increased, grace increased all the more, 21 so that, just as sin reigned in death, so also grace might reign through righteousness to bring eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord

Question: Do you struggle with the Gift of Christ’s Righteousness upon you as a believer?

Response:

- C. Having “your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the Gospel of Peace”. When Moses approached the Burning Bush, the Lord spoke to Him to remove his sandals ([Exodus 3:5-6](#)). This signified that not only was it a Holy Place, but that Moses need not fear in the risk that he would run away. Thus, knowing we have Peace with God, we do not have to fear God ([Romans 5:1](#)) and fear any punishment from Him ([1 John 4:17-18](#)). How joyous is it to know that this Gospel brings freedom, healing, and favour—allowing us to stand in readiness for anything coming our way. That when we have done all we can to stand our ground, we can stay standing through Him.

[Luke 4:16-21](#) (NIV)

He went to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and on the Sabbath day he went into the synagogue, as was his custom. He stood up to read, 17 and the scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. Unrolling it, he found the place where it is written:

18 “The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to proclaim good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to set the oppressed free, 19 to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favour.”

20 Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21 He began by saying to them, “Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing.”

[Romans 1:16-17](#) (NIV)

For I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God that brings salvation to everyone who believes: first to the Jew, then to the Gentile. 17 For in the gospel the righteousness of God is revealed—a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: “The righteous will live by faith.”

Question: Does the Gospel bring you Peace?

Response:

- D. “Take up the Shield of Faith.” This faith is that which Christ Jesus mastered and gifted us ([Hebrews 12:2](#)). Imagine Jesus Himself standing in front of you shielding you from all those “fiery arrows”. For when we manifest God in our lives (what Faith is), we overcome the Devil and any evil against us. Because as we manifest God, no evil can be present. *i.e. When a person is suffering sickness, and they are healed though the power of Christ, there is nothing but God manifesting in them as all evil must flee.*

[Romans 12:3](#) (NIV)

For by the grace given me I say to every one of you: Do not think of yourself more highly than you ought, but rather think of yourself with sober judgment, in accordance with the faith God has distributed to each of you.

[Galatians 2:16-22](#) (NIV) [PoG]

know that a person is not justified by the works of the law, but by [the Faith of] Jesus Christ. So we, too, have put our faith in Christ Jesus that we may be justified by [the Faith of] Christ and not by the works of the law, because by the works of the law no one will be justified.

17 “But if, in seeking to be justified in Christ, we Jews find ourselves also among the sinners, doesn’t that mean that Christ promotes sin? Absolutely not! 18 If I rebuild what I destroyed, then I really would be a lawbreaker.

19 “For through the law I died to the law so that I might live for God. 20 I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I now live in the body, I live by [the Faith of the] Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. 21 I do not set aside the grace of God, for if righteousness could be gained through the law, Christ died for nothing!”

[Ephesians 2:4-10](#) (NIV) [PoG]

But because of his great love for us, God, who is rich in mercy, 5 made us alive with Christ even when we were dead in transgressions—it is by grace you have been saved. 6 And God raised us up with Christ and seated us with him in the heavenly realms in Christ Jesus, 7 in order that in the coming ages he might show the incomparable riches of his grace, expressed in his kindness to us in Christ Jesus. 8 For it is by grace you have been saved, through [His] faith—and this is not from yourselves, [they are gifts] of God— 9 not by works, so that no one can boast. 10 For we are God’s handiwork, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do.

Question: Do you rely on your own faith, or Christ’s Faith?

Response:

E. The “Helmet of Salvation”. When we protect our mind from the error that is the doubting of our Salvation, we can think clearly in battle. This Helmet is the “Hope of Salvation” ([1 Thessalonians 5:8](#)). This Helmet of Hope is there to protect us from the bombardment our mind faces each day living in this world. The world tries to convince us that Jesus Christ is not real... that God does not exist. That living by His Faith can't be true. We are attacked every day in the spiritual realm against our belief in Him to try and convince us it is not all true. This Helmet, because we have a Hopeful Expectation, protects us against that unbelief.

[Acts 4:8-12](#) (NIV)

Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them: “Rulers and elders of the people! 9 If we are being called to account today for an act of kindness shown to a man who was lame and are being asked how he was healed, 10 then know this, you and all the people of Israel: It is by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified but whom God raised from the dead, that this man stands before you healed. 11 Jesus is

“the stone you builders rejected, which has become the cornerstone.”

12 Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to mankind by which we must be saved.”

[Romans 10:9-10](#) (NIV)

If you declare with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. 10 For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you profess your faith and are saved. 11 As Scripture says, “Anyone who believes in him will never be put to shame.” 12 For there is no difference between Jew and Gentile—the same Lord is Lord of all and richly blesses all who call on him, 13 for, “Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.”

[1 Peter 1:3-9](#) (NIV)

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 and into an inheritance that can never perish, spoil, or fade. This inheritance is kept in heaven for you, 5 who through faith are shielded by God’s power until the coming of the salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last time. 6 In all this you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while you may have had to suffer grief in all kinds of trials. 7 These have come so that the proven genuineness of your faith—of greater worth than gold, which perishes even though refined by fire—may result in praise, glory and honour when Jesus Christ is revealed. 8 Though you have not seen him, you love him; and even though you do not see him now, you believe in him and are filled with an inexpressible and glorious joy, 9 for you are receiving the end result of your faith, the salvation of your souls.

Question: Are you convinced of your Salvation through Christ Jesus?

Response:

F. The “Sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God”. Jesus is the Word made flesh, and it is He who pierces to the core of our being. We can use the Word for ourselves (digging out any flaming arrows that get through the armour); or to use the Word to strike down anything not of the Lord coming at us or in someone else.

[John 1:1-5](#) (NIV)

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 He was with God in the beginning. 3 Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. 4 In him was life, and that life was the light of all mankind. 5 The light shines in the darkness, and the darkness has not overcome it.

[Hebrews 4:12-13](#) (NIV)

For the word of God is alive and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart. 13 Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account.

Question: Do you use the Word of God to strike down any opposition against you?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Ephesians 2:1-3](#) (NIV)

As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, 2 in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient. 3 All of us also lived among them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our flesh and following its desires and thoughts. Like the rest, we were by nature deserving of wrath.

[Ephesians 4:17-24](#) (NIV) [PoG]

So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking. 18 They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts. 19 Having lost all sensitivity, they have given themselves over to sensuality so as to indulge in every kind of impurity, and they are full of greed.

20 That, however, is not the way of life you learned 21 when you heard about Christ and were taught in him in accordance with the truth that is in Jesus. 22 You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; 23 to be made new in the [spirit] of your minds; 24 and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

[1 Peter 5:8-9](#) (NIV)

Be alert and of sober mind. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. 9 Resist him, standing firm in the faith, because you know that the family of believers throughout the world is undergoing the same kind of sufferings.

Thoughts: The spiritual forces at work wage war on your mind. As radio frequencies flood the air from broadcast towers, so does the devil flood the spiritual airwaves with his deceptions to try and destroy us. It is only the sound of his roar that tries to devour us—this is just intimidation tactics that cannot harm us. Our flesh hears this because of this world we are born in; but we are Born-Again and hear a new voice. This is why we can stand firm when we hear the lion's roar and not fear, for his strength and power is removed ([Revelations 12:10-11](#)).

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

INTENTION:

There's another one of those guilt-laden words: Repentance.
But don't worry, we'll just change our thinking and let go of any guilt-conscience.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at a what is Repentance and our Conscience.

We tackled the issue of The Mind (Lesson 014) and The Heart (Lesson 016); both of which relate to our Conscience and what Repentance means to us. We will even be reading the same verses from then (Lesson 016) due to this Heart condition connection.

Because the Law makes sin known to us, it focuses our heart and mind onto sin. We see this leading into the ministry of Jesus (who came to set us free from the Law and a sin-conscience). When you are trained in the Law, you are trained to see and judge by sin—even our own sins. Jesus doesn't ever condemn us, only our conscience does. This can be seen in how the Pharisees were "convicted by their own conscience" when they turned away from stoning the woman caught in adultery ([John 8:1-12](#)).

Because the Law and Law-driven sacrifices could never make a person fully clean from sin, Jesus came as the ultimate sin-sacrifice to completely free us of the sins of the flesh; also freeing us from the guilt and condemnation (sin-conscience) that can infest our hearts and minds.

If you try to live by the Law (find righteousness by it), you will fail by it. If you are always seeking forgiveness (sacrifice), you will only be "reminded of your sins". Which is why we must fully embrace and accept His total forgiveness of our sins that is "once and for all" time; giving us, thus, a righteous-conscience.

II. READING: [Hebrews 10:1-23](#) (GNT) [PoG]

The Jewish Law is not a full and faithful model of the real things; it is only a faint outline of the good things to come. The same sacrifices are offered forever, year after year. How can the Law, then, by means of these sacrifices make perfect the people who come to God? 2 If the people worshiping God had really been purified from their sins, they would not feel guilty [have no conscience] of sin anymore, and all sacrifices would stop. 3 As it is, however, the sacrifices serve year after year to remind people of their sins. 4 For the blood of bulls and goats can never take away sins.

5 For this reason, when Christ was about to come into the world, he said to God:

"You do not want sacrifices and offerings, but you have prepared a body for me.

6 You are not pleased with animals burned whole on the altar or with sacrifices to take away sins.

7 Then I said, 'Here I am, to do your will, O God, just as it is written of me in the book of the Law.'"

8 First he said, "You neither want nor are you pleased with sacrifices and offerings or with animals burned on the altar and the sacrifices to take away sins." He said this even though all these sacrifices are offered according to the Law. 9 Then he said, "Here I am, O God, to do your will." So God does away with all the old sacrifices and puts the sacrifice of Christ in their place. 10 Because Jesus Christ did what God wanted him to do, we are all purified from sin by the offering that he made of his own body once and for all.

11 Every Jewish priest performs his services every day and offers the same sacrifices many times; but these sacrifices can never take away sins. 12 Christ, however, offered one sacrifice for sins, an offering that is effective forever, and then he sat down at the right side of God. 13 There he now waits until God puts his enemies as a footstool under his feet. 14 With one sacrifice, then, he has made perfect forever those who are purified from sin.

15 And the Holy Spirit also gives us his witness. First he says,

16 "This is the covenant that I will make with them in the days to come, says the Lord:

I will put my laws in their hearts and write them on their minds."

17 And then he says, "I will not remember their sins and evil deeds any longer." 18 So when these have been forgiven, an offering to take away sins is no longer needed.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



19 We have, then, my friends, complete freedom to go into the Most Holy Place by means of the death of Jesus. 20 He opened for us a new way, a living way, through the curtain—that is, through his own body. 21 We have a great priest in charge of the house of God. 22 So let us come near to God with a sincere heart and a sure faith, with hearts that have been purified from a guilty [sin] conscience and with bodies washed with clean water. 23 Let us hold on firmly to the hope we profess, because we can trust God to keep his promise.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. What does it mean that, “I will put my laws in their hearts and write them on their minds”? If we know the Law of Moses always brought death, we have to look at the ‘law’ that brings life: the law of the Spirit and Love!

[Romans 7:4b-6](#) (GNT)

As far as the Law is concerned, you also have died because you are part of the body of Christ; and now you belong to him who was raised from death in order that we might be useful in the service of God. 5 For when we lived according to our human nature, the sinful desires stirred up by the Law were at work in our bodies, and all we did ended in death. 6 Now, however, we are free from the Law, because we died to that which once held us prisoners. No longer do we serve in the old way of a written law, but in the new way of the Spirit.

[2 Corinthians 3:3-9](#) (GNT)

It is clear that Christ himself wrote this letter and sent it by us. It is written, not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, and not on stone tablets but on human hearts.

4 We say this because we have confidence in God through Christ. 5 There is nothing in us that allows us to claim that we are capable of doing this work. The capacity we have comes from God; 6 it is he who made us capable of serving the new covenant, which consists not of a written law but of the Spirit. The written law brings death, but the Spirit gives life.

7 The Law was carved in letters on stone tablets, and God's glory appeared when it was given. Even though the brightness on Moses' face was fading, it was so strong that the people of Israel could not keep their eyes fixed on him. If the Law, which brings death when it is in force, came with such glory, 8 how much greater is the glory that belongs to the activity of the Spirit! 9 The system which brings condemnation was glorious; how much more glorious is the activity which brings salvation!

[1 John 3:22-24](#) (GNT)

We receive from him whatever we ask, because we obey his commands and do what pleases him. 23 What he commands is that we believe in his Son Jesus Christ and love one another, just as Christ commanded us. 24 Those who obey God's commands live in union with God and God lives in union with them. And because of the Spirit that God has given us we know that God lives in union with us.

Question: Which “law” is in your heart and on your mind?

Response:

- B. Our conscience is the filter we place on our heart and mind (a veil). The Temple (Tabernacle) had two veils: one into the Holy Place (separating it from outer court)—representing our mind; the other into the Holy of Holies

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



(separating it from the Holy Place)—representing our heart. These veils block the free open-access we have to the Father; furthermore, it keeps us from achieving that “correct knowledge” of Love that is the Lord (God the Father, His Son Christ Jesus, and the Holy Spirit). The veil over our heart is “unbelief” and the veil over our minds is “strongholds”. These veils also hindering our Love back to Him—veils keeping us from Loving the Lord with ALL our heart, soul, and mind.

[Matthew 22:36-40](#) (GNT)

“Teacher,” he asked, “which is the greatest commandment in the Law?”

37 Jesus answered, “‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ 38 This is the greatest and the most important commandment. 39 The second most important commandment is like it: ‘Love your neighbour as you love yourself.’ 40 The whole Law of Moses and the teachings of the prophets depend on these two commandments.”

[2 Corinthians 3:12-18](#) (GNT)

Because we have this hope, we are very bold. 13 We are not like Moses, who had to put a veil over his face so that the people of Israel would not see the brightness fade and disappear. 14 Their minds, indeed, were closed; and to this very day their minds are covered with the same veil as they read the books of the old covenant. The veil is removed only when a person is joined to Christ. 15 Even today, whenever they read the Law of Moses, the veil still covers their minds. 16 But it can be removed, as the scripture says about Moses: “His veil was removed when he turned to the Lord.” 17 Now, “the Lord” in this passage is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is present, there is freedom. 18 All of us, then, reflect the glory of the Lord with uncovered faces; and that same glory, coming from the Lord, who is the Spirit, transforms us into his likeness in an ever greater degree of glory.

[2 Corinthians 10:3-5](#) (GNT)

It is true that we live in the world, but we do not fight from worldly motives. 4 The weapons we use in our fight are not the world's weapons but God's powerful weapons, which we use to destroy strongholds. We destroy false arguments; 5 we pull down every proud obstacle that is raised against the knowledge of God; we take every thought captive and make it obey Christ.

[Hebrews 3:12-15](#) (GNT) [PoG]

My friends, be careful that none of you have a heart so evil and unbelieving that you will turn away from the living God. 13 Instead, in order that none of you be deceived by sin and become stubborn, you must help one another every day, as long as the word “Today” in the scripture applies to us. 14 For we are all partners with Christ if we hold firmly to the end the confidence we had at the beginning.

15 This is what the scripture says: “If you hear God's voice today, do not be stubborn [harden your heart], as your ancestors were when they rebelled against God.”

[Hebrews 9:11-14](#) (GNT)

But Christ has already come as the High Priest of the good things that are already here. The tent in which he serves is greater and more perfect; it is not a tent made by human hands, that is, it is not a part of this created world. 12 When Christ went through the tent and entered once and for all into the Most Holy Place, he did not take the blood of goats and bulls to offer as a sacrifice; rather, he took his own blood and obtained eternal salvation for us. 13 The blood of goats and bulls and the ashes of a burnt calf are sprinkled on the people who are ritually unclean, and this purifies them by taking away their ritual impurity. 14 Since this is true, how much more is accomplished by the blood of Christ! Through the eternal Spirit he offered himself as a perfect sacrifice to God. His blood will purify our consciences from useless rituals, so that we may serve the living God.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



Question: Are there any veils on your heart or mind?

Response:

C. If we have a sin-conscience, we can fall into the trap of “useless rituals” ([Hebrews 9:14](#)) that become a law to us.

[Galatians 3:1-5; 10-14](#) (GNT)

You foolish Galatians! Who put a spell on you? Before your very eyes you had a clear description of the death of Jesus Christ on the cross! 2 Tell me this one thing: did you receive God's Spirit by doing what the Law requires or by hearing the gospel and believing it? 3 How can you be so foolish! You began by God's Spirit; do you now want to finish by your own power? 4 Did all your experience mean nothing at all? Surely it meant something! 5 Does God give you the Spirit and work miracles among you because you do what the Law requires or because you hear the gospel and believe it?

Those who depend on obeying the Law live under a curse. For the scripture says, “Whoever does not always obey everything that is written in the book of the Law is under God's curse!” 11 Now, it is clear that no one is put right with God by means of the Law, because the scripture says, “Only the person who is put right with God through faith shall live.” 12 But the Law has nothing to do with faith. Instead, as the scripture says, “Whoever does everything the Law requires will live.”

13 But by becoming a curse for us Christ has redeemed us from the curse that the Law brings; for the scripture says, “Anyone who is hanged on a tree is under God's curse.” 14 Christ did this in order that the blessing which God promised to Abraham might be given to the Gentiles by means of Christ Jesus, so that through faith we might receive the Spirit promised by God.

[1 Timothy 1:3-7; 18-19](#) (GNT)

I want you to stay in Ephesus, just as I urged you when I was on my way to Macedonia. Some people there are teaching false doctrines, and you must order them to stop. 4 Tell them to give up those legends and those long lists of ancestors, which only produce arguments; they do not serve God's plan, which is known by faith. 5 The purpose of this order is to arouse the love that comes from a pure heart, a clear conscience, and a genuine faith. 6 Some people have turned away from these and have lost their way in foolish discussions. 7 They want to be teachers of God's law, but they do not understand their own words or the matters about which they speak with so much confidence.

Timothy, my child, I entrust to you this command, which is in accordance with the words of prophecy spoken in the past about you. Use those words as weapons in order to fight well, 19 and keep your faith and a clear conscience. Some people have not listened to their conscience and have made a ruin of their faith.

[1 Timothy 4:1-5](#) (GNT)

The Spirit says clearly that some people will abandon the faith in later times; they will obey lying spirits and follow the teachings of demons. 2 Such teachings are spread by deceitful liars, whose consciences are dead, as if burnt with a hot iron. 3 Such people teach that it is wrong to marry and to eat certain foods. But God created those foods to be eaten, after a prayer of thanks, by those who are believers and have come to know the truth. 4 Everything that God has created is good; nothing is to be rejected, but everything is to be received with a prayer of thanks, 5 because the word of God and the prayer make it acceptable to God.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



[Titus 1:13-16](#) (GNT)

For this reason you must rebuke them sharply, so that they may have a healthy faith 14 and no longer hold on to Jewish legends and to human commandments which come from people who have rejected the truth. 15 Everything is pure to those who are themselves pure; but nothing is pure to those who are defiled and unbelieving, for their minds and consciences have been defiled. 16 They claim that they know God, but their actions deny it. They are hateful and disobedient, not fit to do anything good.

Question: What are some religious or church doctrines that are based on people having a sin-conscience?

Response:

- D. Paul reinforces to us that we must be “without offence, not troubled and distressed by a consciousness of sin” ([G677](#)). What this entails is us not thinking or believing that when we do sin, we are offending God. This is because God already took care of each and every sin of the flesh we commit through the blood of Jesus Christ.

[Acts 14:16](#) (GNT)

And so I do my best always to have a clear conscience before God and people.

[Philippians 1:9-11](#) (GNT) [PoG]

I pray that your love will keep on growing more and more, together with true knowledge and perfect judgment, 10 so that you will be able to choose what is best. Then you will be free from all impurity and blame [without offense, not troubled by a consciousness of sin, until the] Day of Christ. 11 Your lives will be filled with the truly good qualities which only Jesus Christ can produce, for the glory and praise of God.

[1 Peter 3:18-21](#) (GNT) [PoG]

For Christ died for sins once and for all, a good man on behalf of sinners, in order to lead you to God. He was put to death physically, but made alive spiritually, 19 and in his spiritual existence he went and preached to the imprisoned spirits. 20 These were the spirits of those who had not obeyed God when he waited patiently during the days that Noah was building his boat. The few people in the boat—eight in all—were saved by the water, 21 which was a symbol pointing to baptism, which now saves you. It is not the washing off of bodily dirt, but the [demand for a good conscience toward God]. It saves you through the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

Question: Do you feel you offend God?

Response:

- E. Having a clear conscience requires us to repent. But repentance has nothing to do with our “sins” (or turning from sin), it has to do with changing ones thinking ([G3341](#)). When we think our sins affect our relationship with God, which they do not ([Colossians 1:21](#)), that is having a sin-conscience. When we believe that Christ took away all our sins, then we have a clear-conscience—or more specifically, a righteous-conscience that holds onto the

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



Righteousness given to us by Christ that can never diminish. Thus, part of removing those “veils” is to change our thinking and believing the Truth! To change from seeing yourself as a sinner (having to do with sacrifices or offerings or asking for forgiveness), to seeing yourself (a believer) as righteous, having “the mind of Christ”.

[Romans 3:21-26](#) (GNT) [PoG]

But now God's way of putting people right with himself has been revealed. It has nothing to do with law, even though the Law of Moses and the prophets gave their witness to it. 22 God puts people right through [the faith of] Jesus Christ. God does this to all who believe in Christ, because there is no difference at all: 23 everyone has sinned and is far away from God's saving presence. 24 But by the free gift of God's grace all are put right with him through Christ Jesus, who sets them free. 25-26 God offered him, so that by his blood he should become the means by which people's sins are forgiven through [his faith]. God did this in order to demonstrate that he is righteous. In the past he was patient and overlooked people's sins; but in the present time he deals with their sins, in order to demonstrate his righteousness. In this way God shows that he himself is righteous and that he puts right everyone who believes in Jesus.

[1 Corinthians 2:13-16](#) (GNT)

So then, we do not speak in words taught by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit, as we explain spiritual truths to those who have the Spirit. 14 Whoever does not have the Spirit cannot receive the gifts that come from God's Spirit. Such a person really does not understand them, and they seem to be nonsense, because their value can be judged only on a spiritual basis. 15 Whoever has the Spirit, however, is able to judge the value of everything, but no one is able to judge him. 16 As the scripture says,

“Who knows the mind of the Lord? Who is able to give him advice?”

We, however, have the mind of Christ.

[Ephesians 4:23-24](#) (GNT)

Your hearts and minds must be made completely new, 24 and you must put on the new self, which is created in God's likeness and reveals itself in the true life that is upright and holy.

[2 Timothy 2:24-26](#) (GNT)

As the Lord's servant, you must not quarrel. You must be kind toward all, a good and patient teacher, 25 who is gentle as you correct your opponents, for it may be that God will give them the opportunity to repent and come to know the truth. 26 And then they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the Devil, who had caught them and made them obey his will.

Question: What have you ‘changed your mind about’ the Lord?

Response:

- F. When John the Baptist preached the “baptism of repentance”, he was telling the people to change their minds in how they perceived sin—that they should see Jesus Christ instead ([Mark 1:4-5](#)). This baptism was the washing away of the old and being made clean; to become renewed in a person’s mind and heart. Similar for the Israelites as to their crossing of the Red Sea ([1 Corinthians 10:1-5](#)). But moreso, a clear conscience towards God. And having been cleared in their conscience, they were set-up to then accept and believe in Christ Jesus as their

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



Messiah. John's request for repentance was then really that they should believe on Jesus (turning from their unbelief in anything else). <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2018/01/repentance-from-unbelief-to-belief.html> The Lord is patient for us to "repent" and believe on Him ([2 Peter 3:8-9](#)). This is what Paul confirms:

[Acts 19:1-7](#) (GNT) [PoG]

While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul travelled through the interior of the province and arrived in Ephesus. There he found some disciples 2 and asked them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became believers?"

"We have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit," they answered.

3 "Well, then, what kind of baptism did you receive?" Paul asked.

"The baptism of John," they answered.

4 Paul said, "[John indeed baptized with a baptism of repentance]; and he told the people of Israel to believe in the one who was coming after him—that is, in Jesus."

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. 6 Paul placed his hands on them, and the Holy Spirit came upon them; they spoke in strange tongues and also proclaimed God's message. 7 They were about twelve men in all.

Question: Do you believe in Christ Jesus, changing your mind into knowing He has already removed your sins?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. If repentance were a "moral compass", where God is 'North' and sin is 'South'; then one could easily turn from sin, but yet not turn to God—turning 'East' or 'West'. But even then, God has removed our sins from us "as far as the East is from the West" ([Psalms 102:12](#)). If we do not hold true that our sins are removed from us for all time, we can fall into a condemnation-trap.

[1 John 3:19-21](#) (GNT)

This, then, is how we will know that we belong to the truth; this is how we will be confident in God's presence. 20 If our conscience condemns us, we know that God is greater than our conscience and that he knows everything. 21 And so, my dear friends, if our conscience does not condemn us, we have courage in God's presence.

Thoughts: All this is saying is that, because God already knows everything, there is no need to hide from Him or feel condemned by our mistakes. And that if we do make a mistake, and we don't feel condemned, it is because we actually believe that Christ took all our sins and that we can be confident in the Presence of God. "For, as Christ Jesus is, so are we in this world" ([1 John 4:17](#)).

We can and must live free from a sin-conscience towards God. And must NEVER EVER see ourselves as "a sinner saved by grace", but someone whose sins are completely and forever (before we even commit them) forgiven. When we have a sin-conscience, we are always asking for forgiveness. When we have a righteous-conscience, we walk in confidence that Christ is our all-in-all, knowing He made me righteous forever at the Cross. We can never ask for forgiveness for a sin that's not already been forgiven. We must raise our heads to look Him in the eyes without fear, knowing we are perpetually cleaned and Holy (Saints).

THE LAW

INTENTION:

We do not live by or under the Law. So stop trying!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at The Law.

In saying this, I am talking about the Law passed down through Moses that is the 10 Commandments “written on stone” with all 613 commanded by Moses to Israel:

<https://www.the613commandments.com/The-List-of-the-613-Commandments.html>

However, no one, in any fashion, is currently covenant-tied to the Law. The Law was completely and utterly fulfilled by Christ Jesus on everyone’s behalf—even though the Law was only for the selected group of people who are the Israelites. But in Christ, there is neither Jew nor Gentile. We are all under a new covenant and better covenant.

Let us clear our conscience by not thinking and seeing ourselves as sinners, but as righteous. For when we see ourselves as having the identity of righteousness, we let go of trying to live the Law which only strengthens the sins we are trying to avoid. Live Love by the Spirit; that is all we are commanded to do.

The Law can never usher in love, nor save us (as it is self-centred); salvation is only by God’s Grace and Christ’s Faith ([Ephesians 2:4-10](#)). Thus, let us not do as the Church of Galatia, mixing Grace and Faith with Law requirements.

II. READING: [Galatians 3:1-29](#) (EHV) [PoG]

O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you? Before your very eyes Jesus Christ was clearly portrayed as crucified. 2 I just want to learn this from you: Did you receive the Spirit by the works of the law, or by believing what you heard?

3 Are you so foolish? Having begun by the Spirit, are you now trying to reach the goal by the flesh? 4 Did you experience so many things for nothing, if it were indeed for nothing? 5 So then, does the one who supplies the Spirit to you and works miracles among you, do it by the works of the law? Or does he do it by your believing what you hear— 6 in the same way as Abraham “believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness”?

7 Understand, then, that those who believe are the children of Abraham. 8 Foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, Scripture proclaimed the gospel in advance to Abraham, saying, “In you, all nations will be blessed.” 9 So then, those who have faith are blessed along with Abraham, the man of faith.

10 In fact, those who rely on the works of the law are under a curse. For it is written, “Cursed is everyone who does not continue to do everything written in the book of the law.” 11 Clearly no one is declared righteous before God by the law, because “The righteous will live by faith.” 12 The law does not say “by faith.” Instead it says, “The one who does these things will live by them.”

13 Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us. As it is written, “Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree.” 14 He redeemed us in order that the blessing of Abraham would come to the Gentiles through Christ Jesus, so that we would receive the promised Spirit through faith.

15 Brothers, I am speaking in human terms. When someone has established a last will and testament, no one nullifies it or adds to it. 16 The promises God spoke referred to Abraham and to his seed. It doesn’t say, “And to seeds,” as if it were referring to many, but, as referring to one, “And to your seed,” who is Christ. 17 What I am saying is this: The law, which came into being 430 years after the covenant established earlier by God in Christ, does not annul that covenant, with the result that it invalidates the promise. 18 In fact, if the inheritance is by the law, it is no longer by the promise. But God graciously gave it to Abraham by a promise.

19 Then what about the law? It was added for the purpose of revealing transgressions, until the Seed to whom the promise referred had come. It was transmitted through angels by the hand of a mediator. 20 Now a mediator is not needed for one party, but God is one.

21 Then is the law against the promises of God? Certainly not! For if there had been a law given that could give life, certainly righteousness would have been derived from the law. 22 But Scripture imprisoned all things under sin, so that

THE LAW

Bible Study: Lesson 038



the promise by faith [of] Jesus Christ would be given to those who believe. 23 But before this faith came, we were held in custody under the law, imprisoned until the coming faith was revealed. 24 So the law was our chaperone until Christ, so that we might be justified by [Christ's] faith. 25 But now that this faith has come, we are no longer under a chaperone.

26 In fact, you are all sons of God through [the faith of] Christ Jesus. 27 Indeed, as many of you as were baptized into Christ have been clothed with Christ. 28 There is not Jew or Greek, slave or free, male or female, for you are all one and the same in Christ Jesus. 29 And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's descendants and heirs according to the promise.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. The Law was only given to a select people, not the whole world. It was given to Moses through which all who came to be Israelites accepted that Moses Covenant and the Law which it entails. We do not follow Moses, we follow Christ who didn't destroy the Law, but fulfilled it in our behalf—since it was impossible for any other human to completely live by it or fulfil it. We live by the Grace and Truth of Christ Jesus, not Moses.

[John 1:17 \(EHV\)](#)

For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ.

[Matthew 5:17-20 \(EHV\)](#)

“Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy them but to fulfill them. 18 Amen I tell you: Until heaven and earth pass away, not even the smallest letter, or even part of a letter, will in any way pass away from the Law until everything is fulfilled. 19 So whoever breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven. But whoever practices and teaches them will be called great in the kingdom of heaven. 20 Indeed I tell you that unless your righteousness surpasses that of the Pharisees and experts in the law, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven.

[Romans 4:15-17a \(EHV\)](#)

For law brings wrath. (Where there is no law, there is no transgression.) 16 For this reason, the promise is by faith, so that it may be according to grace and may be guaranteed to all of Abraham's descendants—not only to the one who is a descendant by law, but also to the one who has the faith of Abraham. He is the father of us all. 17 As it is written: “I have made you a father of many nations.”

[Romans 7:4-6 \(EHV\)](#)

In the same way, my brothers, you also were put to death in regard to the law by the body of Christ, so that you may be joined to another, to the one who was raised from the dead, in order that we might produce fruit for God. 5 For when we were in the flesh, strong sinful desires stirred up by the law were at work in our members, with the result that we produced fruit that results in death. 6 But now we have been released from the law by dying to what held us in its grip, so that we serve in the new way of the Spirit and not in the old way of the letter of the law.

Question: Do you consider yourself dead to the Law because of Christ Jesus?

Response:

B. We often hold onto the Law as a requirement of God. But Jesus often discussed with the Pharisees the “Laws of Moses” not “Law of God”. As such, we must think about the covenant we are adopted into. The Law was given to Moses so that God could have a specific covenant with Israel. Love was given to Christ Jesus so that God could have a new covenant with all humanity. As Christ fulfilled the Law, He established a new and better covenant.

[John 7:14-24](#) (EHV)

When the festival was already half over, Jesus went up to the temple courts and began to teach. 15 The Jews were amazed and asked, “How does this man know what is written without being instructed?”

16 Jesus answered them, “My teaching is not mine, but it comes from him who sent me. 17 If anyone wants to do his will, he will know whether my teaching is from God or if I speak on my own. 18 The one who speaks on his own is seeking his own glory. But he who seeks the glory of the one who sent him—that is the one who is true, and there is no unrighteousness in him. 19 Didn’t Moses give you the law? Yet none of you does what the law tells you. Why are you trying to kill me?”

20 “You have a demon!” the crowd answered. “Who is trying to kill you?”

21 Jesus answered them, “I did one work, and you are all amazed. 22 Consider this: Because Moses has given you circumcision (not that it comes from Moses, but from the fathers), you circumcise a man even on the Sabbath. 23 If a man receives circumcision on the Sabbath so that the law of Moses may not be broken, are you angry at me because I made a man completely well on the Sabbath? 24 Stop judging by outward appearance. Instead make a right judgment.”

Question: Are you following Moses and the Law, or Jesus Christ?

Response:

C. The Law always found fault with humanity—and in doing so, never made humans perfect (righteous). And because of humans being imperfect, God the Father sent His own Son, Jesus Christ, as a human to do what no other human could. And as Christ Jesus fulfilled the covenant of the Law, it became null and void, giving us a new and better covenant.

[Hebrews 8:6-8a;13](#) (EHV)

But now, Jesus has obtained a ministry that is as much superior as the covenant that he mediates is better, because it has been established on the basis of better promises. 7 Indeed, if that first covenant were without fault, there would have been no reason to look for a second. 8 But because God found fault with the people, he said:

Look, the days are coming, says the Lord, when I will make a new covenant.

When God said “new,” he made the first covenant obsolete, and something that is obsolete and growing old is going to disappear.

[Hebrews 9:15-18;24-28](#) (EHV)

For this reason, he is the mediator of a new covenant. A death took place as payment for the trespasses committed under the first covenant, so that those who are called would receive the promised eternal inheritance. 16 For where a will exists, it is necessary to establish the death of the one who made the will. 17 For a will takes effect at the time of death, since it is never in force when the one who made the will is still living.

18 For this reason, the first covenant was not ratified without blood.

24 For Christ did not enter a handmade sanctuary, a representation of the true sanctuary. Instead, he entered into heaven itself, now to appear before God on our behalf. 25 And he did not enter to offer himself many times, as the high priest enters the Most Holy Place year after year with blood that is not his own. 26 Otherwise he would have needed to suffer many times since the creation of the world. But now he has appeared once and for all, at the climax of the ages, in order to take away sin by the sacrifice of himself. 27 And, just as it is appointed for people to die only once and after this comes the judgment, 28 so also Christ was offered only once to take away the sins of many, and he will appear a second time—without sin—to bring salvation to those who are eagerly waiting for him.

Question: If the covenant of the Law is obsolete, why do we find that people want to live by it?

Response:

- D. We will always fail trying to live the Law out of our own works (flesh); bringing curse and death. The Law appeals to our flesh because the flesh seeks to establish its own way of righteousness to give itself glory (not the Lord). The new covenant gives all Glory to the Lord, and it is not one of death, but one of the Spirit that gives Life!

2 Corinthians 3:1-11 (EHV)

Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or do we need, like some people, letters of recommendation to you or from you? 2 You yourselves are our letter, written on our hearts, known and read by everyone. 3 It is clear that you are a letter from Christ, delivered by us, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on stone tablets but on tablets that are hearts of flesh.

4 Such is the confidence we have through Christ before God. 5 Not that we are competent by ourselves to claim that anything comes from us; rather, our competence is from God. 6 He also made us competent as ministers of a new testament (not of letter, but of spirit). For the letter kills, but the spirit gives life.

7 If the ministry that brought death (which was engraved in letters on stone) came with glory, so that the Israelites could not look directly at the face of Moses because of the glory of his face (though it was fading), 8 how will the ministry of the spirit not be much more glorious? 9 For if the ministry that brought condemnation has glory, the ministry that brought righteousness has even more glory. 10 In fact, in this case, what was glorious is no longer very glorious, because of the greater glory of that which surpasses it. 11 Indeed, if what is fading away was glorious, how much more glorious is that which is permanent!

Question: Are you dying or Living?

Response:

- E. Our struggle with sin is often because of the Law. For the more we try to adhere to the Law, the more we end up sinning—for the more we try to live the Law, the stronger sin gets. Thank you, Jesus Christ, that I do not have to focus on the Law or my sins (having a sin-conscience).

[Romans 7:7-13](#) (EHV)

What will we say then? Is the law sin? Absolutely not! On the contrary, I would not have recognized sin except through the law. For example, I would not have known about coveting if the law had not said, “You shall not covet.” 8 But sin, seizing the opportunity provided by this commandment, produced every kind of sinful desire in me.

For apart from the law, sin is dead. 9 Once I was alive without the law. But when this commandment came, sin came to life, 10 and I died. This commandment that was intended to result in life actually resulted in death for me. 11 You see, sin, seizing the opportunity provided by this commandment, deceived me and put me to death through it.

12 So the law is holy, and the commandment is holy, righteous, and good. 13 Then did what is good become death to me? Absolutely not! But sin, so that it might be recognized as sin, brings about my death by this good thing, so that through this commandment sin might prove itself to be totally sinful.

[Romans 8:1-4](#) (EHV)

So then, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. 2 For in Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit of life set me free from the law of sin and death. 3 Indeed, what the law was unable to do, because it was weakened by the flesh, God did, when he sent his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh to deal with sin. God condemned sin in his flesh, 4 so that the righteous decree of the law would be fully satisfied in us who are not walking according to the flesh, but according to the spirit.

[1 Corinthians 15:56-57](#) (EHV)

The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ!

Question: What are your struggles with sin?

Response:

- F. When the Lord tells us to follow His Commands, He is not referencing Moses, but Jesus Christ. This Law (Commandment) of Jesus Christ differs from the Law of Moses (10 Commandments). This is critical to see. It becomes easier to obey the Command of Love than the Commands of the Law—especially having the Spirit within us, bearing the Fruit of Love out of us. And when our focus is on Love, we in turn don’t sin (break the Law)

[John 13:34-35](#) (EHV)

“A new commandment I give you: Love one another. Just as I have loved you, so also you are to love one another. 35 By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you have love for one another.”

[1 John 3:19-24](#) (EHV)

This is how we know that we are of the truth and how we will set our hearts at rest in his presence: 20 If our hearts condemn us, God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything. 21 Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God. 22 We also receive from him whatever we ask, because we keep his commands and do what is pleasing in his sight. 23 This then is his command: that we believe in the

name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and that we love one another just as he commanded us. 24 The one who keeps his commands remains in God and God in him. This is how we know that he remains in us: We know it from the Spirit, whom he has given to us.

Question: Is the Law (Command) of Love easier for you than trying to not break the 10 Commandments?

Response:

- G. We are not obliged to live by the Law, only to Agape Love. This is because when we Agape Love, we automatically fulfil the Law.

[Romans 13:8-10](#) (EHV)

Do not owe anyone anything except to love one another, for the one who loves another has fulfilled the law. 9 For the commandments—do not commit adultery, do not murder, do not steal, do not covet (and if there is any other commandment)—are summed up in this statement: “Love your neighbour as yourself.” 10 Love does no harm to a neighbour, so love is the fulfilment of the law.

Question: Do you find that when you Love someone, you don’t break the Law?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. [1 Timothy 1:3-11](#) (EHV)

As I urged you while I was going to Macedonia, remain in Ephesus so that you may command certain men not to teach any different doctrines 4 or pay any attention to myths and endless genealogies that bring about aimless speculations rather than God’s plan, which centres in faith. 5 The goal of this command is love that comes from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from a sincere faith. 6 By veering away from these things, some have turned aside into meaningless talk. 7 They want to be teachers of the law, although they do not comprehend what they are saying or the things they so strongly affirm. 8 Now, we know that the law is good as long as one uses it correctly— 9 keeping in mind that the law is not laid down for a righteous person, but for lawless and rebellious people, for godless people and sinners, for unholy and worldly people, for those who kill their fathers and those who kill their mothers, for murderers, 10 for sexually immoral people, for homosexuals, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and for whatever else is opposed to sound teaching— 11 in keeping with the glorious gospel of the blessed God, with which I was entrusted.

Thoughts: When you are Born-Again, believing in Christ Jesus, you are declared RIGHTEOUS! And as we have learned from previous lessons, that Righteousness cannot diminish or be lost. And that any “defilement” of our body is taken care of (removed) by the Lord. As such, even though we may still sin, our Identity is not that of a sinner, but that of a Righteous person. Thus, don’t let this passage persuade you that any of these sins you may

YOUR ADVERSARY

INTENTION:

You will be surprised in realising who you've made as an enemy—it's not always Satan.

YOUR ADVERSARY

Bible Study: Lesson 039



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at who is Your Adversary.

For me, as a believer, the term “adversary” related directly to the devil—as he is my enemy and creates adversity in my life. But there is another, greater, adversary for non-believers: God.

In Luke and Matthew following, we read Jesus speaking about the need to believe in Him for salvation. That those who do not see and accept Him to be saved are not fearing the right one, God. Because they do not fear (revere) God, they do not take Him seriously. And in doing so, make Him their adversary. God really isn’t our adversary, we just make Him to be one. He Loves and cares for us more than anything, as we are the treasure He gave up His Son for ([Matthew 13:44-46](#)).

The Lord desires all people to come to Christ and be Saved. And it is the Holy Spirit that testifies to each and every individual about Christ Jesus and the true Character and Nature of God for us to come to believe in Him. When we reject that truth of the Holy Spirit, we are “blaspheming” Him, because we are calling Him a liar. And when we continually reject that testimony and die on this earth, we have no second chances to come to Him. This Sin of Blasphemy is the Sin of unbelief (not believing in Jesus Christ). So don’t make the Lord your enemy by rejecting Him.

This is why Jesus tells us: “As you are going with your adversary [*Jesus Christ*] to the ruler [*God the Father*], make an effort to settle with him [*Jesus Christ*] on the way.” And, “Anyone who is not with Me is against Me”.

II. READING: [Luke 12:1-59](#) (HCSB)

In these circumstances, a crowd of many thousands came together, so that they were trampling on one another. He began to say to His disciples first: “Be on your guard against the yeast of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 There is nothing covered that won’t be uncovered, nothing hidden that won’t be made known. 3 Therefore, whatever you have said in the dark will be heard in the light, and what you have whispered in an ear in private rooms will be proclaimed on the housetops.

4 “And I say to you, My friends, don’t fear those who kill the body, and after that can do nothing more. 5 But I will show you the One to fear: Fear Him who has authority to throw people into hell after death. Yes, I say to you, this is the One to fear! 6 Aren’t five sparrows sold for two pennies? Yet not one of them is forgotten in God’s sight. 7 Indeed, the hairs of your head are all counted. Don’t be afraid; you are worth more than many sparrows!

8 “And I say to you, anyone who acknowledges Me before men, the Son of Man will also acknowledge him before the angels of God, 9 but whoever denies Me before men will be denied before the angels of God. 10 Anyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but the one who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. 11 Whenever they bring you before synagogues and rulers and authorities, don’t worry about how you should defend yourselves or what you should say. 12 For the Holy Spirit will teach you at that very hour what must be said.”

13 Someone from the crowd said to Him, “Teacher, tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me.”

14 “Friend,” He said to him, “who appointed Me a judge or arbitrator over you?” 15 He then told them, “Watch out and be on guard against all greed because one’s life is not in the abundance of his possessions.”

16 Then He told them a parable: “A rich man’s land was very productive. 17 He thought to himself, ‘What should I do, since I don’t have anywhere to store my crops? 18 I will do this,’ he said. ‘I’ll tear down my barns and build bigger ones and store all my grain and my goods there. 19 Then I’ll say to myself, “You have many goods stored up for many years. Take it easy; eat, drink, and enjoy yourself.”’

20 “But God said to him, ‘You fool! This very night your life is demanded of you. And the things you have prepared—whose will they be?’

21 “That’s how it is with the one who stores up treasure for himself and is not rich toward God.”

22 Then He said to His disciples: “Therefore I tell you, don’t worry about your life, what you will eat; or about the body, what you will wear. 23 For life is more than food and the body more than clothing. 24 Consider the ravens: They don’t sow or reap; they don’t have a storeroom or a barn; yet God feeds them. Aren’t you worth much more than the birds? 25 Can any of you add a cubit to his height by worrying? 26 If then you’re not able to do even a little thing, why worry about the rest?”

27 “Consider how the wildflowers grow: They don’t labour or spin thread. Yet I tell you, not even Solomon in all his splendour was adorned like one of these! 28 If that’s how God clothes the grass, which is in the field today and is thrown into the furnace tomorrow, how much more will He do for you—you of little faith? 29 Don’t keep striving for what you should eat and what you should drink, and don’t be anxious. 30 For the Gentile world eagerly seeks all these things, and your Father knows that you need them.

31 “But seek His kingdom, and these things will be provided for you. 32 Don’t be afraid, little flock, because your Father delights to give you the kingdom. 33 Sell your possessions and give to the poor. Make money-bags for yourselves that won’t grow old, an inexhaustible treasure in heaven, where no thief comes near and no moth destroys. 34 For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

35 “Be ready for service and have your lamps lit. 36 You must be like people waiting for their master to return from the wedding banquet so that when he comes and knocks, they can open the door for him at once. 37 Those slaves the master will find alert when he comes will be blessed. I assure you: He will get ready, have them recline at the table, then come and serve them. 38 If he comes in the middle of the night, or even near dawn, and finds them alert, those slaves are blessed. 39 But know this: If the homeowner had known at what hour the thief was coming, he would not have let his house be broken into. 40 You also be ready, because the Son of Man is coming at an hour that you do not expect.”

41 “Lord,” Peter asked, “are You telling this parable to us or to everyone?”

42 The Lord said: “Who then is the faithful and sensible manager his master will put in charge of his household servants to give them their allotted food at the proper time? 43 That slave whose master finds him working when he comes will be rewarded. 44 I tell you the truth: He will put him in charge of all his possessions. 45 But if that slave says in his heart, ‘My master is delaying his coming,’ and starts to beat the male and female slaves, and to eat and drink and get drunk, 46 that slave’s master will come on a day he does not expect him and at an hour he does not know. He will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the unbelievers. 47 And that slave who knew his master’s will and didn’t prepare himself or do it will be severely beaten. 48 But the one who did not know and did things deserving of blows will be beaten lightly. Much will be required of everyone who has been given much. And even more will be expected of the one who has been entrusted with more.

49 “I came to bring fire on the earth, and how I wish it were already set ablaze! 50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how it consumes Me until it is finished! 51 Do you think that I came here to give peace to the earth? No, I tell you, but rather division! 52 From now on, five in one household will be divided: three against two, and two against three.

53 They will be divided, father against son, son against father, mother against daughter, daughter against mother, mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and daughter-in-law against mother-in-law.”

54 He also said to the crowds: “When you see a cloud rising in the west, right away you say, ‘A storm is coming,’ and so it does. 55 And when the south wind is blowing, you say, ‘It’s going to be a scorcher!’ and it is. 56 Hypocrites! You know how to interpret the appearance of the earth and the sky, but why don’t you know how to interpret this time?”

57 “Why don’t you judge for yourselves what is right? 58 As you are going with your adversary to the ruler, make an effort to settle with him on the way. Then he won’t drag you before the judge, the judge hand you over to the bailiff, and the bailiff throw you into prison. 59 I tell you, you will never get out of there until you have paid the last cent.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Making God your adversary is recounted also in [Matthew 5](#). At the time of Jesus, and even to this day, mankind saw God as the opponent—for people had an issue with God based on ignorance or misguided teachings by the Scribes and Pharisees (and people today). As such, God saw this and rectified it. It is not that God was really our enemy, but we made Him so. Thus, as He sent Christ Jesus to the Cross (as an alter gift), He saw that mankind (brothers) had something against Him and went about reconciling Himself to mankind ([2 Corinthians 5:14-21](#)). If we do not, in return, come to believe and be Born-Again, we maintain our status as his adversary—which is why He says to “settle quickly” otherwise face eternal judgement to “throw people into hell (prison) after death”.

[Matthew 5:21-26](#) (HCSB)

“You have heard that it was said to our ancestors, Do not murder, and whoever murders will be subject to judgment. 22 But I tell you, everyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. And whoever says to his brother, ‘Fool!’ will be subject to the Sanhedrin. But whoever says, ‘You moron!’ will be subject to hellfire. 23 So if you are offering your gift on the altar, and there you remember that your brother has something against you, 24 leave your gift there in front of the altar. First go and be reconciled with your brother, and then come and offer your gift. 25 Reach a settlement quickly with your adversary while you’re on the way with him, or your adversary will hand you over to the judge, the judge to the officer, and you will be thrown into prison. 26 I assure you: You will never get out of there until you have paid the last penny!

Question: Share how, before coming to believing Him, you saw God as an enemy?

Response:

- B. God often gives us instruction that we find difficult or even offensive. But God will never instruct us to do something He Himself doesn’t do—just as we now read above in Matthew. He will always hold Himself to the same standards of Righteousness that He holds us to. There is only one kind of Righteousness and one kind of Holy. As such, when we are told to “love our enemies” we can see that God loves us even if we are convinced He is our enemy. He cannot not Love each and every human being. He died not for just believers, but for all of humanity; believers or not ([John 3:16-17](#)).

[Luke 6:27-36](#) (HCSB)

“But I say to you who listen: Love your enemies, do what is good to those who hate you, 28 bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you. 29 If anyone hits you on the cheek, offer the other also. And if anyone takes away your coat, don’t hold back your shirt either. 30 Give to everyone who asks you, and from one who takes your things, don’t ask for them back. 31 Just as you want others to do for you, do the same for them. 32 If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners love those who love them. 33 If you do what is good to those who are good to you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners do that. 34 And if you lend to those from whom you expect to receive, what credit is that to you? Even sinners lend to sinners to be repaid in full. 35 But love your enemies, do what is good, and lend, expecting nothing in return. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High. For He is gracious to the ungrateful and evil. 36 Be merciful, just as your Father also is merciful.”

Question: Do you have a difficult time loving your enemies?

Response:

- C. As unbelievers, we were against the Lord—the term for a non-believer being: Evil. Just as the unbelieving Pharisees were called evil ([Matthew 12:33-37](#)). But even though we had been against the Lord, and thus enemies of the Lord, He Loved us so much that He reconciled Himself to us. We had something against Him, yet He was the one to do the reconciliation ([Matthew 5:23-24](#)). Now we do not have to fear Him, allowing us to come to Him without fear or worry. It is only in our imaginations (minds) that we think we are His enemy.

[Romans 5:1-11](#) (HCSB)

Therefore, since we have been declared righteous by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. 2 We have also obtained access through Him by faith into this grace in which we stand, and we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God. 3 And not only that, but we also rejoice in our afflictions, because we know that affliction produces endurance, 4 endurance produces proven character, and proven character produces hope. 5 This hope will not disappoint us, because God’s love has been poured out in our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us.

6 For while we were still helpless, at the appointed moment, Christ died for the ungodly. 7 For rarely will someone die for a just person—though for a good person perhaps someone might even dare to die. 8 But God proves His own love for us in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us! 9 Much more then, since we have now been declared righteous by His blood, we will be saved through Him from wrath. 10 For if, while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, then how much more, having been reconciled, will we be saved by His life! 11 And not only that, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ. We have now received this reconciliation through Him.

[Colossians 1:21-23](#) (HCSB)

Once you were alienated and hostile in your minds because of your evil actions. 22 But now He has reconciled you by His physical body through His death, to present you holy, faultless, and blameless before Him— 23 if indeed you remain grounded and steadfast in the faith and are not shifted away from the hope of the gospel that you heard. This gospel has been proclaimed in all creation under heaven, and I, Paul, have become a servant of it.

Question: Does knowing ahead of time that you’ve already been reconciled by God make it less obtrusive to then come to believe in Him or minister to others to believe in Him?

Response:

- D. Because we are reconciled to come to Him to claim His Righteousness as our own, we do have an opponent that tries to keep us from believing in Him: Satan. It is he who tries to snatch up the seed of the gospel that is spread on a person’s heart. For the one on the path is too hard for the seed to sink in, and it gets stolen by Satan. The rocky and thorny ones are people who do become Born-Again believers, but their fruit is stifled by persecution or strongholds (such as worldly things).

[Mark 4:13-20](#) (HCSB)

Then He said to them: “Don’t you understand this parable? How then will you understand any of the parables? 14 The sower sows the word. 15 These are the ones along the path where the word is sown: when they hear, immediately Satan comes and takes away the word sown in them. 16 And these are the ones sown on rocky ground: when they hear the word, immediately they receive it with joy. 17 But they have no root in themselves; they are short-lived. When pressure or persecution comes because of the word, they immediately stumble. 18 Others are sown among thorns; these are the ones who hear the word, 19 but the worries of this age, the seduction of wealth, and the desires for other things enter in and choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. 20 But the ones sown on good ground are those who hear the word, welcome it, and produce a crop: 30, 60, and 100 times what was sown.”

Question: Looking back to before being Born-Again, can you see the times when the seed was taken from you?

Response:

- E. There are people in this world that hold God as an enemy, and therefore, hold you as a believer as an enemy. This enmity can come from direct persecution, or just by the things around us in the world. Remember, we fight the spiritual battles. We cannot help but live among our enemies, but we have been given Grace and Peace to live above their deceptions.

[Matthew 13:24-30](#) (HCSB)

He presented another parable to them: “The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a man who sowed good seed in his field. 25 But while people were sleeping, his enemy came, sowed weeds among the wheat, and left. 26 When the plants sprouted and produced grain, then the weeds also appeared. 27 The landowner’s slaves came to him and said, ‘Master, didn’t you sow good seed in your field? Then where did the weeds come from?’ 28 “‘An enemy did this!’ he told them.

“‘So, do you want us to go and gather them up?’ the slaves asked him.

29 “‘No,’ he said. ‘When you gather up the weeds, you might also uproot the wheat with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest. At harvest time I’ll tell the reapers: Gather the weeds first and tie them in bundles to burn them, but store the wheat in my barn.’”

[Philippians 3:13-2](#) (HCSB)

Brothers, I do not consider myself to have taken hold of it. But one thing I do: Forgetting what is behind and reaching forward to what is ahead, 14 I pursue as my goal the prize promised by God’s heavenly call in Christ Jesus. 15 Therefore, all who are mature should think this way. And if you think differently about anything, God will reveal this also to you. 16 In any case, we should live up to whatever truth we have attained. 17 Join in imitating me, brothers, and observe those who live according to the example you have in us. 18 For I have often told you, and now say again with tears, that many live as enemies of the cross of Christ. 19 Their end is destruction; their god is their stomach; their glory is in their shame. They are focused on earthly things, 20 but our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for a Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ. 21 He will transform the body of our humble condition into the likeness of His glorious body, by the power that enables Him to subject everything to Himself.

[2 Thessalonians 2:1-4](#) (HCSB)

Now concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our being gathered to Him: We ask you, brothers, 2 not to be easily upset in mind or troubled, either by a spirit or by a message or by a letter as if from us, alleging that the Day of the Lord has come. 3 Don't let anyone deceive you in any way. For that day will not come unless the apostasy comes first and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the son of destruction. 4 He opposes and exalts himself above every so-called god or object of worship, so that he sits in God's sanctuary, publicizing that he himself is God.

[1 John 4:1-6](#) (HCSB)

Dear friends, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to determine if they are from God, because many false prophets have gone out into the world.

2 This is how you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit who confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God. 3 But every spirit who does not confess Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist; you have heard that he is coming, and he is already in the world now.

4 You are from God, little children, and you have conquered them, because the One who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. 5 They are from the world. Therefore what they say is from the world, and the world listens to them. 6 We are from God. Anyone who knows God listens to us; anyone who is not from God does not listen to us. From this we know the Spirit of truth and the spirit of deception.

Question: Do you come across people or things in this world that directly or deceptively oppose the Lord?

Response:

- F. Sometimes, our adversary are the things we must give up. Often, when we seek the Lord and His ways, the ways of our former self must be let go of. Holding onto them can be a stronghold that keeps us anchored to our past. Sometimes that stronghold isn't just money and things, but people—family that are close to us and mean the most to us. Thus, many times, it is very difficult to either come to believe in Christ or to follow Him if it means we will lose our “brothers, sisters, mothers, and children”—knowing even the persecution that may come.

[Mark 10:23-31](#) (HCSB)

Jesus looked around and said to His disciples, “How hard it is for those who have wealth to enter the kingdom of God!” 24 But the disciples were astonished at His words. Again Jesus said to them, “Children, how hard it is to enter the kingdom of God! 25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God.”

26 So they were even more astonished, saying to one another, “Then who can be saved?”

27 Looking at them, Jesus said, “With men it is impossible, but not with God, because all things are possible with God.”

28 Peter began to tell Him, “Look, we have left everything and followed You.”

29 “I assure you,” Jesus said, “there is no one who has left house, brothers or sisters, mother or father, children, or fields because of Me and the gospel, 30 who will not receive 100 times more, now at this time—houses, brothers and sisters, mothers and children, and fields, with persecutions—and eternal life in the age to come. 31 But many who are first will be last, and the last first.”

YOUR ADVERSARY

Bible Study: Lesson 039



Question: What have you given up, or being called to give up with the Lord?

Response:

G. When we choose the Lord and to believe in Christ Jesus, that moment we are Born-Again, we no longer make God our adversary (enemy), the devil now becomes our adversary (enemy). And as we learned in previous Bible Lessons, the devil is not specifically Satan, but anything that opposes God—thus opposing you as a Child of God.

[1 Peter 5:8-9](#) (HCSB)

8 Be serious! Be alert! Your adversary the Devil is prowling around like a roaring lion, looking for anyone he can devour. 9 Resist him and be firm in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are being experienced by your fellow believers throughout the world.

[Revelations 12:7-12](#) (HCSB)

Then war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon. The dragon and his angels also fought, 8 but he could not prevail, and there was no place for them in heaven any longer. 9 So the great dragon was thrown out—the ancient serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, the one who deceives the whole world. He was thrown to earth, and his angels with him.

10 Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say:

The salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Messiah have now come, because the accuser of our brothers has been thrown out: the one who accuses them before our God day and night.

11 They conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, for they did not love their lives in the face of death.

12 Therefore rejoice, you heavens, and you who dwell in them!

Woe to the earth and the sea, for the Devil has come down to you with great fury, because he knows he has a short time.

Question: Do you see the Devil and Satan at work in this world?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Luke 11:14-26](#) (HCSB)

Now He was driving out a demon that was mute. When the demon came out, the man who had been mute, spoke, and the crowds were amazed. 15 But some of them said, "He drives out demons by Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons!" 16 And others, as a test, were demanding of Him a sign from heaven.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

INTENTION:

The Lord holds “no records of wrongs” in your life (or anyone else’s) Thus, we have to let go of the fear that all my sins done in secret will be revealed at Final Judgement.

A person is only judged by whether they Believe in Jesus Christ or don’t.

That’s all it is; and not everyone will be at the “Great White Throne of Judgement”.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Final Judgement.

This is at the very end of earth's existence as it is to be burned with fire when God judges the Righteous and the Evil.

We will look at what this Judgement is, and where it fits chronologically with all the events leading up to it regarding the Living and the Dead. Following, to start off in brief, is the history of all things:

1. "In the Beginning" ([Genesis 1:1a](#)). God is infinite—He has always existed and will always exist.
2. From God's timeless beginning (not our human beginning), the world itself had forever existed as a sphere covered fully by "waters of the deep" ([2 Peter 3:5](#)) with the Spirit of the Lord perpetually hovering over it ([Genesis 1:2](#)).
3. Then the following events of "Creation" transpired over the next 6 days culminating in the earth fully prepared for humanity ([Genesis 1:3-31](#)). God then rested ([Genesis 2:1-3](#)).
4. Mankind, living in the Garden of Eden then began their free-will nature of taking from the fruit and sinning. This resulted in mankind, one-by-one, being expelled from the Garden populating the world ([Genesis 3:1-24; 6:1-4](#)).
5. Eventually, mankind had grown in such number with the freedom of God's Love, Grace, and Mercy that they forgot about God. This was devastatingly sad for the Lord who was their literal Father. That His children abandoned Him crushed His heart. Try as He might, none would hearken to Him and His efforts were futile. But, a few people did still hear and revere ([Genesis 6:5-8](#)).
6. This brought about the great full-earth Flood ([Genesis 7:1-24; 8:1-22; 9:1-17](#)) destroying all but that which was on the Ark. It was so violent, it tore the continents apart from the Pangea grouping to the way we see them now. *One may wonder why He would punish all of humanity this way, but remember, they were given a chance to believe in Christ as they patiently waited for Jesus to come minister to them in prison* ([1 Peter 3:18-20](#)).
7. Post-Flood, we can read about in Job which is the oldest book of the Bible talking about the Dinosaurs and Dragons saved in the Ark ([Job 37-42](#)).
8. Humanity multiplied and united again from that devastation, yet followed back into their own fleshly ways, building the Tower of Babel to try and overcome God. This is when conflict arose among them and each one could not agree and created factions of people and languages to define their own identity separate from God and from each other. And they scattered the earth to the lands we have now ([Genesis 11:1-9](#)).
9. At no time had the Character and Nature of God's Love, Grace, and Mercy left the earth. But, in order to intervene to help keep humans from once again repeating their fleshly ways, God stepped in to the life of Abram ([Genesis 12:1-9; 13:14-18; 14:18-24; 15:1-20; 17:1-27; 18:1-15; 21:1-7](#)).
10. Then from Abraham, the lineage gets to Joseph in Egypt ([Genesis 37; 39; 41; 42; 43; 44; 45; 46; 47](#)). "God sent me before you to preserve for you a remnant in the earth, and to save you alive by a great deliverance". There they prospered and brought us the great architecture and master-building that was the Egyptian empire and Pyramids—but done so eventually as slaves ([Exodus 1:1-15; 2:23-25](#)).
11. We then get to Moses ([Exodus 3:1-22](#)). The Lord freed the Israelites ([Genesis 12:31-42](#)), not to bring them out to destroy them, but to give them rest to settle in the land promised them through Abraham. They were instead scared of the unknown, their flesh longing to return to the perceived "comfort" of slavery ([Exodus 14:10-14](#)).

At this time, the Lord gave to Moses the 10 Commandments "written on stone" ([Exodus 20:1-17; 31:18](#)). Ones that gave them an understanding of what the Lord's Heart was for them to just Love and not sin. But what was meant as Life, Israel hardened their own hearts ([Hebrews 3:3-11](#)); instead finding an impossible set of rules to follow. They did not yet trust the Lord as a Loving and protecting Father. So they wandered the desert, protected and favoured, until the generation that held onto to Egypt passed ([Acts 7:38-54](#)).

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040



12. But these “rules” could never make a person Righteous ([Galatians 2:15-21](#)). And so, as He always knew, He had to send His own Son, Jesus Christ, as a Law-Abiding Human to follow the meaning of the Law and all the blood sacrifices it entailed to fulfil the Law, bringing peace and unity between all humanity ([Romans 8:1-4](#)) through His own blood—where now there is neither Jew or Greek, Male or Female, Slave or Free ([Galatians 3:26-29](#)).

13. Since that completion through the Cross, the sending back of the Holy Spirit to all the earth and to each and every human ([Acts 2:16-21](#)), and the utter destruction of the literal Jewish Temple, we now, currently live in this “His Sabbath Rest” ([Mark 2:27-28](#)) and the “Year of the Lord’s Favour” ([Luke 4:16-21](#)), until Christ Jesus comes again.

This now is where we as humanity lives, waiting for the Lord to come again to separate the wheat from the tares ([Matthew 13:24-30](#)), and usher in the 1,000-year reign of Christ Jesus and the completion of the End Times.

Let’s first see how Jesus speaks about the “End Times”, then get into the events that will transpire before the “Great White Throne of Judgement”:

II. **READING:** [Matthew 24:1-51; 25:31-46](#) (WEB) [PoG]

Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on his way. His disciples came to him to show him the buildings of the temple. 2 But he answered them, “You see all of these things, don’t you? Most certainly I tell you, there will not be left here one stone on another, that will not be thrown down.”

3 As he sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, saying, “Tell us, when will these things be? What is the sign of your coming, and of the end of the age?”

4 Jesus answered them, “Be careful that no one leads you astray. 5 For many will come in my name, saying, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will lead many astray. 6 You will hear of wars and rumours of wars. See that you aren’t troubled, for all this must happen, but the end is not yet. 7 For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there will be famines, plagues, and earthquakes in various places. 8 But all these things are the beginning of birth pains.

9 “Then they will deliver you up to oppression and will kill you. You will be hated by all of the nations for my name’s sake. 10 Then many will stumble, and will deliver up one another, and will hate one another. 11 Many false prophets will arise and will lead many astray. 12 Because iniquity will be multiplied, the love of many will grow cold. 13 But he who endures to the end will be saved. 14 This Good News of the Kingdom will be preached in the whole world for a testimony to all the nations, and then the end will come.

15 “When, therefore, you see the abomination of desolation, [Daniel 9:27; 11:31; 12:11](#), which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), 16 then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. 17 Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take out the things that are in his house. 18 Let him who is in the field not return back to get his clothes. 19 But woe to those who are with child and to nursing mothers in those days! 20 Pray that your flight will not be in the winter nor on a Sabbath, 21 for then there will be great suffering, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, nor ever will be. 22 Unless those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved. But for the sake of the chosen ones, those days will be shortened.

23 “Then if any man tells you, ‘Behold, here is the Christ!’ or, ‘There!’ don’t believe it. 24 For there will arise false christs, and false prophets, and they will show great signs and wonders, so as to lead astray, if possible, even the chosen ones.

25 “Behold, I have told you beforehand.

26 “If therefore they tell you, ‘Behold, he is in the wilderness,’ don’t go out; or ‘Behold, he is in the inner rooms,’ don’t believe it. 27 For as the lightning flashes from the east, and is seen even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. 28 For wherever the carcass is, that is where the vultures gather together.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040



29 “But immediately after the suffering of those days, the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give its light, the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken; [Isaiah 13:10; 34:4](#) 30 and then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky. Then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory. 31 He will send out his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together his chosen ones from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.

32 “Now from the fig tree learn this parable: When its branch has now become tender and produces its leaves, you know that the summer is near. 33 Even so you also, when you see all these things, know that he is near, even at the doors. 34 Most certainly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all these things are accomplished. 35 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away.

36 “But no one knows of that day and hour, not even the angels of heaven, but my Father only. 37 As the days of Noah were, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. 38 For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ship, 39 and they didn’t know until the flood came and took them all away, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. 40 Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken and one will be left. 41 Two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and one will be left. 42 Watch therefore, for you don’t know in what hour your Lord comes. 43 But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what watch of the night the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have allowed his house to be broken into. 44 Therefore also be ready, for in an hour that you don’t expect, the Son of Man will come.

45 “Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has set over his household, to give them their food in due season? 46 Blessed is that servant whom his lord finds doing so when he comes. 47 Most certainly I tell you that he will set him over all that he has. 48 But if that evil servant should say in his heart, ‘My lord is delaying his coming,’ 49 and begins to beat his fellow servants, and eat and drink with the drunkards, 50 the lord of that servant will come in a day when he doesn’t expect it and in an hour when he doesn’t know it, 51 and will cut him in pieces and appoint his portion with the hypocrites. That is where the weeping and grinding of teeth will be.

31 “But when the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then he will sit on the throne of his glory. 32 Before him all the nations will be gathered, and he will separate them one from another, as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. 33 He will set the sheep [*believers*] on his right hand, but the goats [*non-believers*] on the left. 34 Then the King will tell those on his right hand, ‘Come, blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world; 35 for I was hungry and you gave me food to eat. I was thirsty and you gave me drink. I was a stranger and you took me in. 36 I was naked and you clothed me. I was sick and you visited me. I was in prison and you came to me.’

37 “Then the righteous will answer him, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you, or thirsty and give you a drink? 38 When did we see you as a stranger and take you in, or naked and clothe you? 39 When did we see you sick or in prison and come to you?’

40 “The King will answer them, ‘Most certainly I tell you, because you did it to one of the least of these my brothers, you did it to me.’ 41 Then he will say also to those on the left hand, ‘Depart from me, you cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the devil and his angels; 42 for I was hungry, and you didn’t give me food to eat; I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink; 43 I was a stranger, and you didn’t take me in; naked, and you didn’t clothe me; sick, and in prison, and you didn’t visit me.’

44 “Then they will also answer, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and didn’t help you?’

45 “Then he will answer them, saying, ‘Most certainly I tell you, because you didn’t do it to one of the least of these, you didn’t do it to me.’ 46 These will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Though we are living post-Cross now, we can look back to Jesus's death, that while dead, He ministered to those in prison (being guarded and keeping watch, [G5438](#)). He spoke the Truth of Himself and God's Gospel of Grace so that they were given the free-will choice on whether to believe in Him for Salvation or not.

[1 Peter 3:18-22](#) (WEB)

Because Christ also suffered for sins once, the righteous for the unrighteous, that he might bring you to God, being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the Spirit, 19 in whom he also went and preached to the spirits in prison, 20 who before were disobedient, when God waited patiently in the days of Noah, while the ship was being built. In it, few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water. 21 This is a symbol of baptism, which now saves you—not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, 22 who is at the right hand of God, having gone into heaven, angels and authorities and powers being made subject to him.

Question: Is this fair to you that the Lord ministered to those who didn't have a chance to know Jesus then?

Response:

- B. As now, living post-Cross in the "year of the Lord's favour" which is not one year, but refers to a time-period that is from Jesus coming to His next coming. And this Second Coming will be pre-empted by what is coined "The Rapture". This word isn't in the Bible, but is a term created for all believers being lifted from this earth to meet the Lord Jesus in the Heavens. Of note, that when referring to believers whose bodies have perished on this earth, it is discussed as "sleep" (just as Jesus referred to the deceased Lazarus in [John 11:11-15](#) as fallen asleep). Likewise for the phrase "the dead in Christ", it is not the same Death as being a non-believer whose eternal destination is in Hell.

[1 Corinthians 15:51-55](#) (WEB)

Behold, I tell you a mystery. We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed, 52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we will be changed. 53 For this perishable body must become imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54 But when this perishable body will have become imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then what is written will happen: "Death is swallowed up in victory." [Isaiah 25:8](#)

55 "Death, where is your sting? Hades, where is your victory?" See [Hosea 13:14](#)

[1 Thessalonians 4:13-18](#) (WEB)

But we don't want you to be ignorant, brothers, concerning those who have fallen asleep, so that you don't grieve like the rest, who have no hope. 14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus. 15 For this we tell you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive, who are left until the coming of the Lord, will in no way precede those who have fallen asleep. 16 For the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with God's trumpet. The dead in Christ will rise first, 17 then we who are alive, who are left, will be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air. So we will be with the Lord forever. 18 Therefore comfort one another with these words.

Question: If the “dead in Christ” and all other believers are “caught up together” (raptured) to meet Jesus, who is left on the earth?

Response:

- C. So, when does the “rapture” take place? For me, it is in the middle of the Great Tribulation. When reading [Revelation 5, 6, and 7](#) as being in chronological order, “those who came out of the great tribulation” did so after the sixth seal was broken and before the seventh seal. When they came out (were raptured), it states from what we read above, that “we will be with the Lord forever. Therefore comfort one another with these words”. And we will read following that they are clothed in white robes, and they are before the throne of God. We see that there is an immediate transition from being on earth to being changed in that twinkling of an eye into the imperishable. All those, “dead in Christ” and living believers go straight to where the Lord is, shepherding them and leading them to springs of life-giving waters.

[Revelation 7:9-17](#) (WEB) [PoG]

After these things I looked, and behold, a great multitude, which no man could count, out of every nation and of all tribes, peoples, and languages, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes, with palm branches in their hands. 10 They cried with a loud voice, saying, “Salvation be to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb!”

11 All the angels were standing around the throne, the elders, and the four living creatures; and they fell on their faces before his throne, and worshiped God, 12 saying, “Amen! Blessing, glory, wisdom, thanksgiving, honour, power, and might, be to our God forever and ever! Amen.”

13 One of the elders answered, saying to me, “These who are arrayed in the white robes, who are they, and where did they come from?”

14 I told him, “My lord, you know.”

He said to me, “These are those who came out of the great suffering [tribulation]. They washed their robes, and made them white in the Lamb’s blood. 15 Therefore they are before the throne of God, they serve him day and night in his temple. He who sits on the throne will spread his tabernacle over them. 16 They will never be hungry or thirsty any more. The sun won’t beat on them, nor any heat; 17 for the Lamb who is in the middle of the throne shepherds them and leads them to springs of life-giving waters. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes.”

Question: Are any who are “raptured” told or shown to be judged?

Response:

- D. This, is not the only “rapture”. From the time that these living believers and “dead in Christ” are taken up to heaven, earth and humanity still exist. And thus, for a time period, with chaos ravaging the earth, other people will come to believe in Christ Jesus as the great tribulation testifies of the Lord. The next “rapture” is the harvest.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040

[Revelations 14:6-20](#) (WEB)

I saw an angel flying in mid heaven, having an eternal Good News to proclaim to those who dwell on the earth, and to every nation, tribe, language, and people. 7 He said with a loud voice, "Fear the Lord, and give him glory; for the hour of his judgment has come. Worship him who made the heaven, the earth, the sea, and the springs of waters!"

8 Another, a second angel, followed, saying, "Babylon the great has fallen, which has made all the nations to drink of the wine of the wrath of her sexual immorality."

9 Another angel, a third, followed them, saying with a great voice, "If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives a mark on his forehead, or on his hand, 10 he also will drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared unmixed in the cup of his anger. He will be tormented with fire and sulphur in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb. 11 The smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever. They have no rest day and night, those who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name. 12 Here is the perseverance of the saints, those who keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus."

13 I heard a voice from heaven saying, "Write, 'Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on.'"

"Yes," says the Spirit, "that they may rest from their labours; for their works follow with them."

14 I looked, and saw a white cloud, and on the cloud one sitting like a son of man, [Daniel 7:13](#) having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. 15 Another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him who sat on the cloud, "Send your sickle, and reap; for the hour to reap has come; for the harvest of the earth is ripe!" 16 He who sat on the cloud thrust his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 Another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven. He also had a sharp sickle. 18 Another angel came out from the altar, he who has power over fire, and he called with a great voice to him who had the sharp sickle, saying, "Send your sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for the earth's grapes are fully ripe!" 19 The angel thrust his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vintage of the earth, and threw it into the great wine press of the wrath of God. 20 The wine press was trodden outside of the city, and blood came out of the wine press, even to the bridles of the horses, as far as one thousand six hundred stadia.

Question: What does it mean to you that, "Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on... that they may rest from their labours; for their works follow with them"?

Response:

- E. What follows the harvest are bowls of wrath ([Revelation 15 and 16](#)) poured out over humanity to give one last set of signs and wonders to have people come to believe in Him. More Grace and opportunity for anyone to choose Him. But in heaven, multitudes and multitudes give praise (all those believers who have come up from the earth in the previous "raptures"). Yet, on earth, some humans come to believe in the Lord still.

[Revelation 19:1-9;19-21](#) (WEB)

After these things I heard something like a loud voice of a great multitude in heaven, saying, "Hallelujah! Salvation, power, and glory belong to our God; 2 for his judgments are true and righteous. For he has judged the great prostitute, who corrupted the earth with her sexual immorality, and he has avenged the blood of his servants at her hand."

3 A second said, "Hallelujah! Her smoke goes up forever and ever." 4 The twenty-four elders and the four living creatures fell down and worshiped God who sits on the throne, saying, "Amen! Hallelujah!"

5 A voice came from the throne, saying, "Give praise to our God, all you his servants, you who fear him, the small and the great!"

6 I heard something like the voice of a great multitude, and like the voice of many waters, and like the voice of mighty thunders, saying, "Hallelujah! For the Lord our God, the Almighty, reigns! 7 Let's rejoice and be exceedingly glad, and let's give the glory to him. For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and his wife has made herself ready." 8 It was given to her that she would array herself in bright, pure, fine linen: for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.

9 He said to me, "Write, 'Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb.'" He said to me, "These are true words of God."

19 I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him who sat on the horse, and against his army. 20 The beast was taken, and with him the false prophet who worked the signs in his sight, with which he deceived those who had received the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. These two were thrown alive into the lake of fire that burns with sulphur. 21 The rest were killed with the sword of him who sat on the horse, the sword which came out of his mouth. So all the birds were filled with their flesh.

Question: Who is now left on the earth?

Response:

- F. We are now set up for Christ's 1000-year reign. We have two groups of people left now: the first are those already changed into their new bodies from being brought up out of the earth, and secondly, those who are left on the earth that came to believe in Christ Jesus (but who have not received their new bodies). These believing survivors of the wrath of God are now free of evil as Satan and the Devil are locked up. These people can now start repopulating the earth as they are still in the original bodies. He is using these 1000 years of His reign to demonstrate to humanity what earth would be like if sin, Satan, and the Devil didn't exist.

Revelation 20:1-6 (WEB)

I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, having the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. 2 He seized the dragon, the old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole inhabited earth, and bound him for a thousand years, 3 and cast him into the abyss, and shut it, and sealed it over him, that he should deceive the nations no more, until the thousand years were finished. After this, he must be freed for a short time. 4 I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was given to them. I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and such as didn't worship the beast nor his image, and didn't receive the mark on their forehead and on their hand. They lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. 5 The rest of the dead didn't live until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. 6 Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over these, the second death has no power, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with him one thousand years.

Question: Who are the "rest of the dead"?

Response:

- G. God always gives us free will. He will never force us to believe Him. Hence why, after 1000 years, Satan will be released for people to chose between believing the Lord or not.

[Revelation 20:7-10](#) (WEB)

And after the thousand years, Satan will be released from his prison, 8 and he will come out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to the war; the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. 9 They went up over the width of the earth, and surrounded the camp of the saints, and the beloved city. Fire came down out of heaven from God and devoured them. 10 The devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulphur, where the beast and the false prophet are also. They will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

Question: We are told that during this time, to die at 100 years old is to die early and animals won't kill each other ([Isaiah 65:17-25](#))—why then only 1000 years of reign?

Response:

- H. The people now remaining on the earth are believers still alive from before the 1000-year reign, and anyone born during that 1000-years that did not get deceived and believes in the Lord. We have to recall that those who were raptured before, were already made new, given white robes, and have been with the Lord perpetually. Thus, all who are to be judged now at the final judgement are: believers that are still alive (but not in their new bodies) and all those who are dead—whether those believers who died between the previous “rapture” and through the 1000-year reign, or those that are dead non-believers (awaiting in Hades for their final judgement). And it is at this final judgement that two scrolls (books) are opened that tell of the persons’ works. But these works are not talking about sins committed, but whether the work of believing or work of not believing in Jesus Christ:

[John 6:28-29](#) (WEB)

28 They said therefore to him, “What must we do, that we may work the works of God?”

29 Jesus answered them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent.”

[Revelation 20:11-15](#) (WEB)

I saw a great white throne, and him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. There was found no place for them. 12 I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and they opened books. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged out of the things which were written in the books, according to their works. 13 The sea gave up the dead who were in it. Death and Hades gave up the dead who were in them. They were judged, each one according to his works. 14 Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. 15 If anyone was not found written in the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire.

Question: Have you ever been threatened or told not to commit sin because it will be revealed in final judgment from some “book of sins”?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [1 Corinthians 13:4-8a](#) (WEB)

Love is patient and is kind. Love doesn't envy. Love doesn't brag, is not proud, 5 doesn't behave itself inappropriately, doesn't seek its own way, is not provoked, takes no account of evil; 6 doesn't rejoice in unrighteousness, but rejoices with the truth; 7 bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, and endures all things. 8 Love never fails.

Thoughts: We've learned before that 'God = Love' ([1 John 4:16](#)). So when we read that “love takes no account of evil”, it is directly saying, “God takes no account of evil”. Meaning, there is no record-keeping of any of your wrongs, sins, or evils. How can He judge us on something He does not keep a record of? All your sins of the flesh were taken at the Cross “once and for all time” ([Hebrews 10:10](#)). We need not fear final judgement because there will be no torment (correction, punishment, penalty – penal infliction). The only Sin that matters is the Sin of Not Believing in Christ Jesus (being the works of God to believe); and this Jesus's words about believing in Him:

[John 12:44-48](#) (WEB)

Jesus cried out and said, “Whoever believes in me, believes not in me, but in him who sent me. 45 He who sees me sees him who sent me. 46 I have come as a light into the world, that whoever believes in me may not remain in the darkness. 47 If anyone listens to my sayings, and doesn't believe, I don't judge him. For I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48 He who rejects me, and doesn't receive my sayings, has one who judges him. The word that I spoke will judge him in the last day.

[1 John 2:22-29](#) (WEB) [PoG]

Who is the liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the Antichrist, he who denies the Father and the Son. 23 Whoever denies the Son doesn't have the Father. He who confesses the Son has the Father also.

24 Therefore, as for you, let that remain in you which you heard from the beginning. If that which you heard from the beginning remains in you, you also will remain in the Son, and in the Father. 25 This is the promise which he promised us, the eternal life. 26 These things I have written to you concerning those who would lead you astray. 27 As for you, the anointing which you received from him remains in you, and you don't need for anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is no lie, and even as it taught you, you will remain in him. 28 Now, little children, remain in him, that when he appears, we may have boldness, and not be ashamed before him at his coming. 29 If you know that he is righteous, you know that everyone who [has been made righteous] has been born of him.

[1 John 4:17-18](#) (WEB) [PoG]

In this, love has been made perfect among us, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment, because as he is, even so we are in this world. 18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear has punishment [torment]. He who fears is not made perfect in love.

